00088322

BOMBAY BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 04 April, 2016

NOTICES OF BRAZIL

IN

1828 AND 1829.

88322
oc

BY THE

REV. R. WALSH, LL.D. M.R.I.A.

AUTHOR OF

"A JOURNEY FROM CONSTANTINOPLE,"

&c. &c. &c.

Ya. C. 1

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

YA C 1

LONDON:

FREDERICK WESTLEY AND A. H. DAVIS.

STATIONERS' HALL COURT.

1830.

00088322

LONDON:

PRINTED BY R. CLAY, BREAD-STREET-HILL, CHEAPSIDE.

CONTENTS TO VOL. II.

Purpose to visit the interior, 1. Weight of money for travelling expenses, 2. Patricio, Indian guide, 3. His extraordinary speed, 4. Land crabs, 5. Iraja and English landlord, 6. Various kinds of inns, *ibid.* Appearance of the country, 7. Brazilian dinner, 8. Carapatocs, 9. Brazilian gentleman, 11. Miss our guide and lose our way, 12. Mandioca, 13. Beautiful Brazilian farm, 14. Venda at Jacotinga, 16. Negress at Venda Nova, 18. Fecundity of vegetation, 19. Ragged host at S. Pedro, 21. Luzia, Hottentot cook, from Mozambique, 22. Extraction of carapatoos, 24. Picturesque rancho, 25. Arrival of Patricio, 26. Ascend the mountain with muleteers, 27. Brazilian lady, 28. Ticu palm, 29.

Brazilian forest, 30. Summit of the serra, 32. Marquez de S. João Marcos, rational title to nobility, 33. Injurious effects of conferring it, 35. Beautiful plain of Botães, 36. Strange mode of Brazilian courtship, 37. Treatment of guard of honour, 39. Rude machinery of fazenda, 40. Populous mountain roads, 14. Singular deception at the Parahiba, 42. Ave Maria beetle, 43. Rio Parahiba, 44. Vampire bats, 45. Monkeys and parrots, 47. Valença Indian aldêa, 48. Soap-at estalagem, 49. Breakfast, 50. Slave market, 51. Lady of Valença, 52. German doctor, 53. Rats and bats at Rio Bonito, 55. Attack a cow, *ibid.* Magnificent bamboos, 56. Various kinds, 57. Crosses, 58. Vultures, 59.

Rio Preto, why so called, 60. Registry, 61. Bexigas, or small-pox, 62. Papos or goitres, 63. Mode of making touchino at Funil, 64. Service of Sabbath in a wood, 65. Awful storm, 66. Lodgings at Rio do Peixe, 67. Preparations for going to bed, *ibid.* Sudden appearance of the campos, 68. Retrospect of mountains, 69. Indians, 70. Pernicious effects of plan for their conversion and civilization, 71. Aldêas or villages, 72. Singular beauty and solitude of campos, 74. Chilian pine, 75. Deceptive appearance of wild oats, 76. Copim or ant-hills, 77. Migration of ants, 78. Singular superstition, *ibid.* Armadillo taken after a chase, 79. Venda of José Gonçalvez, 80. Village of Bertioga, 81. Immense coira or hide, 82. Superiority of Brazilian puncho to European cloaks, 83. School at Ilhéo, *ibid.* The unusual luxury of table-knives, 85. Punch bath, 86. Chuva fria or cold rain, 87. Physical powers of negroes, 88. Appearance of serra and town of S. José, 89.

Mining Association, 90. Establishment at S. José, 91. Prejudice of natives, 92. Burial of a miner, 94. Mulatto priest, 96. Notions of chronology and geography, 97. Singular music in Church, 99. Brazilian concert, 100. Notions of an evening party, 101. First discovery of gold in the Minas Geraes, 102. Paulistas, 103. River of Deaths, 104. Lavras or gold washings, 105. Pernicious effects, 106. Metalliferous serras, 107. Serra of S. José, 108. Solitude and banditti, 109. Qualities indicating gold, 110. Prophecy, 111. Modes of mining by Brazilians, 112. Advantages of encouraging foreign companies, 114. Sesmarias, or grants by government, 115. First company established, 118. Terms of agreement, *ibid.* Quality of gold found at S. José, 119.

Invited to harvest-home of gold, 121. Process of collecting it, 122. Impregnated sods, 124. Ouro Preto, or black gold, 125. Quantity collected, 126. Destruction of vegetable soil, 127. Visit to S. João d'el Rey, 128. Gold-finding interwoven with all the habits of the people, *ibid.* Remains of ancient workings, 129.

Extravagant notions of English skill, 130. Matozinhos, 132. Description of S. João d'el Rey, 133. Fondness of cattle for salt, 134. Extraordinary accounts of the riches of a pit, 135. Visit the Ouvidor of the Comarca, 137. Caza de Fundacão, or smelting house, 138. Quantity of gold passed through in 1828, 141. Public Library, 142. Polytechnic society, 143. Dine with the Ouvidor, 144. Manners and character, 145. Gross outrage on the young men of S. José, 146. Entertainment and prejudice against mutton, 150. Anecdotes of the Company, 151. Fecundity of the females, 153. Extraordinary birth, 154.

Set out for Villa Rica, 155. Prodigal waste of wood, 156. Awful thunder storm, 158. Herds of black cattle, 159. Singular appearance of chasms crossing the road, 161. Arrived at Lagoa Dourado, 162. Attacked with spasms, and from what cause, 163. Rich lavras, 164. Cause of assassination, *ibid.* Cross indicating the effects of lightning, 165. Olho d'Agoa, 166. Beautiful fazenda of Medonza, 167. Various reasons for erecting crosses, 168. Origin of the name of Sua Suci, 169. Papos of our hostess, and cause assigned for it, 170. Negress attendant, 171. Patriarchal host, *ibid.* Redondo, 172. Congonhas or Paraguay tea, 173. Dangerous pass, 174. Landlady at Chepado do Mato, 175. Negro minstrel, 176. Wild serra of Ouro Branco, 177. Masses of iron, *ibid.* Beautiful serpent, 178. Suspicious rancho at Rodeo, 179. Cross the serra at sunset, 180. Arrive after dark at Capão da Lana, 181.

Singular diversity of frogs, 182. Topaz mine, 183. mode of working, 184. Mine of Boa Vista, 185. Topaz market, 186. Supposed abundance in this district, 187. Passed for diamonds, 188. Picturesque hills of Boa Vista, 189. Dilapidated approach to Villa Rica, 190. Inn in ruins, 191. Site of the town, 192. Lake and crater of a volcano, 193. Ita Columi, or child of stone, a singular mountain, *ibid.* English manufactures, 195. Population,

196. Former opulence, 197. Demoralization and decay, 198. Present employment of the people, 200. Braziers and smiths, 201. First iron found, and its manufacture discouraged, 202. Anecdote, *ibid.* Encouraged by Dom John, 203. Joy at the first melting in a foundry, 204. Statue to commemorate it, *ibid.* Superior quality, 205.

Mines of Gongo Soco, 206. Former working, 207. Purchased by the Imperial Brazilian Mining Company, 209. Melancholy fate of the miners of Antonio Pereira, 210. Richness of Gongo Soco, 212. English colony, *ibid.* Benefits to Brazilians, 213. Visit the deputy Vasconcellos, 214. His prejudices against the English, 216. Urbanity and good nature, 217. Enemy to the abolition of the slave trade, 219. Money circulation in the Minas Geraes, 220. Untiring activity of Patricio, 221. Rare and singular fruit found in the woods, 222. Caverns near S. José, 223. Scarcity and value of lime-stone, 224.

Set out for Rio by Estrada d'Estrella, 225. My companion, *ibid.* Feel very desolate, 226. Corpulent hostess at Barroza, 227. Pigs, 228. Breakfast at Cangayera, 229. Teams passing the river, 230. Splendid view on campos, 231. Barbacena, 232. First Englishman who visited it, 233. Registo, 234. Host and hostess, 235. Horse lamed, and cannot proceed, 236. Dismal and comfortless state alone, 237. Visit the vigario, 238. Mode of living, 239. Antique procession, 240. Again proceed, 242. Rancho of Confisco, *ibid.* Family dances, 244. Nocturnal visitation, 245. Fern and blackberries, 246. Mantiquiera, 247. Brazilian mode of making roads, 248. Beautiful town of Pedro Alves, 249. Night-blowing cactus, 250. Monkey and castor-oil seeds, 251.

Lose our way in a wood, 252. Interminable appearance of forest, 253. Cataract of Caxoeira, 254. Fazenda of Joaquim Vidal, 255. Gigantic mulatto, *ibid.* Singularly beautiful field of milho, 256.

Difficulty of shoeing horses, 257. Mode of procuring shoes—obligation to my new friend, the mulatto—and his reward, *ibid.* Brazilians suppose me carrying a box of gold, 258. Opinions on it, *ibid.* Arrive at the river Parahibuna, 259. Wild village of Marmelo, in the serra, 260. Dismal appearance of Madeiras, 261. Hospitality of the Dona Theresa, 262. Brazilian widow, 263. Inscription on a jug, 264. Threshing milho, 265. Dream of romance destroyed, 266. Beautiful fazenda of Idhea, 267. Registry of Mathias Barbosa, 268. Passage of the Parahibuna, 269. Hospitable host at Ignacio, 271. Pass the registry and river of Parahiba, 273.

Painful night at Governo, 274. German host at La Cruz, 276. Intelligent hostler at the Segretaria, 277. Beauty of the river Piabunda, 278. Strange want of accommodation at Semidouro, 279. Hospitality of a Brazilian gentleman at Salta, 281. Emperor's family at Padre Correa, 282. Magnificent appearance of the American aloe, 283. Smiths mistaken for frogs at Samambaya, 284. Estrada d'Estrella, *ibid.* Splendid view from the summit, 285. Mandioca, 286. Porto d'Estrella—bustle and activity of business, 288. Embark, and arrive at Rio, 289.

Retrospect of journey, 290. Reported, and real character of the Brazilians, 291. Rudeness, *ibid.* Indolence, *ibid.* Ignorance, 292. Irritability, 293. Inhospitality, *ibid.* Licentiousness, 294. Dishonesty, 295. Climate 297. Varied face of nature under six different aspects, 299. Beira-mar—balsam, *ibid.* Spiders, 300. Spider silk, 301. Serra acima, clay mountains, 302. Remarkable trees, 303. Assai, or cabbage palm, 304. Air-plants and barren pines, 306. Arapongo, solitary bird, 309. Campos—Fruta do Lobo, *ibid.* John of the Clay, 310. Ben te vi, 311. Metalliferous serras, *ibid.* Mato, 312. Granite pikes, *ibid.*

State of slavery—capture of the first negro slave, 313. First sent to America, 314. Portuguese writer against the slave trade, 315.

Proposed seventy years ago to make it piracy, 318. Brazilian Bishop defends it, 319. Treaty with Portugal for its abolition, 320. Recognized in Brazil, 321. When to be entirely abolished, *ibid.* Melancholy effects in increasing the traffic, 322. Ciganos, or gipsy slave merchants, 323. Slave market at Vallongo, 324. Painful spectacle of a young female, 325. Fierce desperation in the countenance of males, 326. Interesting group of boys, 327. amiable dispositions, 328. Pecuniary sacrifice of the Brazilian government in the abolition, 329. Fearful superiority of blacks in number, 330. Cause of security of the whites, *ibid.* Physical strength of the negroes, 331. Deteriorated, and why, 332. Present importations resemble Hottentots, 333. Malungoes, 334.

Mysterious song, 335. Musical instruments, 336. Excitement of drum, 337. National dances, 338. African prince, 339. Eager for baptism, and why, 340. Mode of salutation, 341. Negro industry, 342. Fugitives, 343. Neck irons, 344. Determined suicides, affecting instance, 345. Horror at the state of slavery, 349. Effects of disappointing their hopes of liberty, 350. Mulatto slave murders his father, 351. Interminable period of slavery, 352. Precaution of ecclesiastics to prevent slave progeny from becoming white, 353. European fathers sell their own white children, *ibid.* Slavery deteriorates our best feelings, 355. Instances among the Brazilians, 356. Victims of private revenge, 357. At the calabouço, 358. In private houses, 359. Negro mode of self-destruction, *ibid.* Law neither protects nor restrains a slave, 360. Murder committed by slaves at Bota Fogo with impunity, 361. Slavery prevents the improvement of the country, 362. Slaves taught to buy and sell one another, *ibid.* People generally convinced of the evils of it, 364. Strange rumour of Mr. Wilberforce, 365. Free blacks and mulattos, *ibid.* European colonies—German, 366. Swiss, 367. Irish, 368. Portuguese constitutionalists, *ibid.* Visit to the Organ mountains, 369. Limestone discovered by a German miner, who would not communicate his secret, 370. Magé and Freixal, 371. Sudden transition from heat to cold, 372. Extent and quality of a moun-

tain farm in Brazil, 373. Tiger hunter, *ibid.* Senzalla like Hottentot kraal, 374. Burning woods and explosions of tacwara, 375. Game procured by negroes, 376. Dissection of Jacaraca Viper, 377. Boa constrictor, 378.

Natural and artificial indications of the approach of Lent, 379. Pelting eggs of wax, 380. Amusements of the intruso, 381. Extensive system of inundation, 382. Processions of Ash Wednesday, 383. Have lost all their effect upon the people, 384. Emperor bearing the cross, 385. Levity of the spectators, 386. Sermon addressed to the image of St. Joseph, 387. Washing the feet of the poor on Holy Thursday, 388. Sound of bells prohibited, and extraordinary reason why, 390. Probable origin of Maundy Thursday, *ibid.* Interesting spectacle of negro girls, 391. Good Friday—Splendid display and theatric effect, 393. Cock that crew to warn Peter, 394. Hallelujah Saturday, 395. Exhibition and punishment of Judas, 396. Figures, devices, and Poetical labels, 397. Description of the Rua Direita, 399. Judas seized by Satan, 400. Contents of broken vases, 401. Amusing and expensive exhibition, 402. Easter Sunday marked by the device of a dove, 403. Emperor of the Holy Spirit elected, 404.

Insurrection at Pernambuco, 405. Progress and suppression, 406. Other causes of alarm at Maranhão, 407. Effects on the currency, 408. Erection of a gallows, 409. English squadron proceed to blockade the port of Rio, 410. Excitement among the Brazilians, and impression on the Bishop, 411. Curious reason assigned for the measure, *ibid.* French aid the English squadron, and why, 412. Burning bank-notes, 413. Expected arrival of the Portuguese constitutionalists, 414. Embarrassment of the government, and anger of the people at the conduct of England, 415. Legislative body convoked a month before the usual time, 416. Cards of invitation to foreign ministers and their suites, for the opening

of the session, 417. Senate-house, by whom built, 418. Description of it, 419. Arrival of the Emperor, 421. Dress and conduct, 422. Effects of his speech, 423. Indifference of the few spectators abroad, 424.

Visit to Vasconcellos at Rio, menage and accommodation of Brazilian deputies, 425. Proceed with them to the chamber, 426. Intense interest excited among the people, *ibid.* Description of chamber, 427. Effects of an observation on the Emperor's throne, 428. Facility and fluency of the deputies, 429. Vasconcellos, 430. Custodio Dias, 431. Augusto May, 432. Cunha Matos, *ibid.* Gonsalves Ledo, 433. Clemente Pereira, 434. Subject of the debate, 435. Sketch of the speeches, 436. Strong prejudices expressed against the admission of the Portuguese, 438. Illness of Vasconcellos, 445. Arrival of some Portuguese emigrants in Brazil, and their final reception, 446.

Attend a levee for the last time, 447. Emperor surrounded by his young family, *ibid.* Former oppression and tyrannical conduct of the royal family when they went abroad, 448. Now altered, and why, 449. No trace of it visible in the Emperor or his attendants, *ibid.* Pays a visit every Saturday to the church of N. S. da Gloria, 450. His behaviour there, and his familiarity with all classes, 451. Present him with some books, and am invited to pay him my personal respects at Christovão, 452. Royal residence formerly a merchant's house, presented to Dom John, 453. Ornamented by a screen colonnade, made in England, and sent out by the Duke of Northumberland, 455. Introduction and conversation with the Emperor, 457. Great mechanic, like his namesake of Russia, 458. Singular device in his chamber, 459. Domestic habits, 460. Learning English, and how instructed by his English groom, *ibid.* Exceeding frugality, 461. Modes of making money, 462. Natural talents and able manner in which he has exerted them, 463. Connexion with secret societies, 464. Laconic

address from his brother masons, 465. Now a supposed enemy even to literary institutions, 466. One great cause of his loss of popularity, 467. Likely now to regain his moral influence, 468.

North Star appointed to take us home, and we embarked on the 4th of May, *ibid.* Ship swarms with African insects, 469. Extraordinary use of spiders, 470. Living state of the biscuit, 471. Very healthy state of a crew from a pestiferous coast, *ibid.* Pirates and slaves from the Havannah, 472. Cuba as bad as Algiers; the opprobrium of the civilized word, 473. Desperate pirate and slaver from thence met by Capt. Arabin on the coast of Africa, 474. expect to fall in with her, and determined to capture her, 475. Supposed to be in sight, 476. Immediately give chase, all day, 477. Disappears after dark, but glimpses of her occasionally caught with night glasses, 478. Come up with her next day, after a chase of three hundred miles, 479. Turns out to be a slaver and pirate, but not the expected Spaniard, *ibid.* Equipment of ship and stowage of slaves, 480. Their delight when they saw us on board, 481. Horrible state in which they were confined, 482. Turned up on deck, *ibid.* Fearful excitement when they saw fresh water, 483. Dreadful sufferings from an act of neglect, 484. Mortality among slaves visited on the crew, *ibid.* Appalling account of slave ships on the coast, 485. Impression of English made on slaves by the slave dealers, 486. Rigid examination of captain's papers, 487. Not sufficient evidence to capture him, as he was a Brazilian, trading to south of the Line, 488. Good effected by the abolition bears but a small proportion to the evil still existing, 491. Two circumstances wanting to make the abolition effectual, 492.

Consequence of immersion in cold water after violent exercise, 494. Extraordinary strength of a shark, 495. Intrepid humanity of a sailor named Burke, 496. Mar do sargaço, or weedy sea, 498. Description of fucas natans, 499. Conjectures as to its origin probably not correct, 500. Never fixed, but vegetates on the

surface, like some confervas, 501. Columbus's crab, 502. Young turtle, *ibid.* Molluscæ in vast abundance, 504. Uses of their creation indicated, 505. Make St. Michael's, 506. Excitement of the people; from what cause, 507. Absurd rumours eagerly believed, 508. Sagacity of St. Michael asses, 510. Islands first discovered by Flemings, 511. Population and produce, 512. Late profitable speculation in oranges, 513. Annual emigration of peasantry to Brazil, 515. Singular cap and its uses, 516. Intelligent Constitutionalist gentleman, 517.

Different origin of the Atlantic and Pacific Islands, 518. All the latter volcanic, 519. Structure and soil of St. Michael's, 520. Isle of Ilhéo a submarine volcano, *ibid.* Destruction of Villa Franca, 521. Other mutations from volcanic causes, 522. Effects in 1810; wonderful expulsion of an island by a volcano from the bottom of the sea, 524. Gradual progress and ascent, 525. Visited by several people, 526. Materials of which it was composed, 527. Taken possession of by the English, *ibid.* Again descends into the deep with the Union flag flying on the summit, 528. Porto Ilhéo still existing to shew what the other had been, *ibid.* From analogy the Atalantis might have had once an existence, and even St. Brandon's Isle, 529. Our aproach to England indicated by dingy clouds and Channel gull, 530. Land at Portsmouth, *ibid.*

APPENDIX.

No. I.—Carta Regia for Opening the Ports of Brazil 531
II.—Decree for Elevating Brazil into a Kingdom 532
III.—Hymno, Imperial, e Constitucional. Composto por S. M. I. o Senhor Dom Pedro 1º. 533
IV.—Exports from Rio Janeiro, &c. 535
V.—Names of the Streets, &c. and Number of Houses, in the City of Rio de Janeiro, in the year 1829 537
VI.—Civil List 541

NOTICES OF BRAZIL,

In 1828 and 1829.

Having seen every thing that Rio presented worth noticing, I availed myself of an opportunity of visiting the interior of the country. Mr. Milward, the superintendent of the mines of S. José, was in Rio, and about to return; and having been apprised by Colonel Cunningham of my wish to make a tour of the Minas Geraes, he was so good as to propose to me to accompany him. Just before our departure I met, at Rio, Mr. Holman, the traveller, who, though labouring under a total privation of sight, has visited and described so many countries: he had just returned from the district I proposed to explore, and gave me some useful information as to the mode of travelling. He was suffering

under a severe inflammation in his foot, from the bite of an insect, and I learned to profit by his experience.

Our first care was to provide passports, and his Excellency Lord Strangford was so good as to procure me, a particular letter from the Marquez D'Aracati, minister of foreign affairs, which I found afterwards exempted me from much annoyance. Our next care was to provide money, and this was no easy task. Rio notes circulated only in the province, and nothing but a metallic currency would pass beyond it. The gold and silver had all disappeared, and no money was to be had but copper. This coinage was in large pieces of eighty reis, and was full as inconvenient to carry, as the iron money of the Spartans; even for this we were obliged to pay a discount of twelve or fifteen per cent.; and when we had procured as much as was necessary for our expenses on the road, our purse weighed three arrobas, nearly 1 cwt., and was a load for a mule. I carried a portion of it for a short time in a bag fastened to my saddle, and the pressure soon raised a large tumour on the horse's shoulder. As the rainy season had just commenced, we provided ourselves with large cloaks, and prepared sheep-skins, with the wool on, to lay on our saddles, as a precaution

against sciatica, and on the 8th of December, 1828, we left Rio at nine in the morning.

Our company consisted of two horsemen, and a mule containing our luggage, led by a pardo or mulatto. This was a very extraordinary person; he was of a mixed race, one of his parents a negro, and the other a native Indian, and he partook of the qualities of both. His colour was very dark, with woolly hair, but his figure was tall, thin, and erect, and his countenance had a certain cast of thought that was evidently not African; it was at the same time pensive and intelligent. His habits were irreclaimably erratic, and his whole enjoyment consisted in wandering, which, as he was a free man, he could indulge when he pleased. He was a native of S. José, and was always employed by Mr. Milward in bearing letters and messages to distant parts, which he did with incredible despatch. On one occasion which required speed, he was sent off with a letter to Villa Rica, by the sargente mor of the town, and was back with an answer before it was supposed possible he could have arrived at the place. He actually travelled on foot over mountains, through woods, and across rivers, a distance of 192 miles in 36 hours, and returned without any appearance of fatigue; a speed and perseverance that

beat Captain Barclay or any English pedestrian all to nothing. He was, moreover, a person of the strictest integrity, with a certain tincture of romance and sensibility, that greatly interested me for this man of the woods, and by an odd coincidence he was baptized Patricio, after the patron saint of Ireland, by the vigario of S. José. Mr. Milward had brought him to Rio some time before, where the confinement of the city, and the dull habits of social life, had nearly proved fatal to him, and he got extremely ill. Doctors were consulted and medicines procured for him, but he obstinately refused all physic, except bananas and water, to which he judiciously confined himself, till he got clear of the contagious atmosphere of a town. When we first set out he was seized with a fit of trembling and debility that alarmed us, but the moment he began to breathe the air of the woods, and enjoy the free exercise of his limbs, he at once recovered his wonted strength and activity.

Our way lay along the bay, through the village of S. Christovão; we passed some muddy flats, left by receding waters, and I was surprised to see the whole surface moving with life towards us. On a nearer approach, I found they were crabs of different sizes, but all armed with enormous claws: when they moved, they

brandished these long thick claws in the air, and really looked formidable assailants. They are constantly eaten by the people, though to me nothing could appear more revolting, than these hideous misshapen insects.*

As we passed the houses on the road, we saw various groups of persons in their best clothes, and found it was a high holiday in Brazil, the feast of the Patrocinio de Nossa Senhora, and celebrated like an Irish patron. A number of them, with their families, were making merry and enjoying themselves in the best manner they could, as if not the best, at least the most agreeable way, of showing their devotion to their tutelary saint. The road was sandy, but wide and good, with clipped mimosas, forming dense hedges at each side, like those of hawthorn in England. At about eight miles from the town, we met with a mile-stone, having on it the number II., intimating that we were two leagues on our road. This is one of the few, or perhaps the only mile, or rather league-stone, in Brazil, and was set up by the emperor on this road, from S. Christovão, to his fazenda at Santa Cruz—but his example was followed no where else.

* Cancer fasicularis.

We now arrived at Praya Pequena, where we met a troop of mules laden with coffee; many of them stopped at Bemfica, or the good resting place; a canal is cut from hence to the bay, by which the coffee was conveyed by water.

Having next passed Venda Nova, we arrived about one at Iraja, and stopped at the house of Mr. Willis, an Englishman. On the roads of Brazil there are four kinds of resting places. A rancho, which literally means an assemblage or company of persons; and hence it is applied to the place where they stop. It is nothing more than a large shed, supported on pillars, entirely open at the sides, and gives no kind of accommodation or refreshment, but the shelter of the roof to mules and mule drivers. The next is a venda, which literally means a shop, where refreshments are sold. Attached to this, there is frequently a quarto, or lodging-room; and, on some occasions, a cama, or bed. The third is an estalagem, or inn, with the usual accommodations of such a place, but this is very rare indeed. The last is a fazenda, or farm-house. Frequently the fazendeiro, or farmer, is an inn-keeper, and in this way disposes of his produce, and entertains travellers at his own house; but sometimes he does not sell his entertainment, but receives a stranger

from motives of hospitality. This is not uncommon in Brazil, as I can testify.

We saw besides on the road, a continued succession of chacaras and quintas, different names for the country residences of Brazilian gentlemen. They generally stood in the middle of a demesne, which was well cultivated in the Brazilian mode of farming, and were approached by large ornamental gates, which seemed carefully kept, and were generally fresh painted. Many of the mansions were built by merchants and retired shopkeepers from Rio; who, having realized a property in the city, expended it in beautifying the country;—a proof at once of the growing opulence of the place, and the good taste and feeling of the inhabitants. A great part of the improved land we had passed, was, in the memory of even young people, mato, or tangled thicket.

Mr. Willis had married a Brazilian lady, very respectable and lady-like in her manners, and was himself a fazendeiro, who kept besides a large venda. His house was a long edifice, with a stable at one end, and a shop at the other; and in front, a shed or portico supported on pillars. Before the door was a number of Englishmen, connected with mercantile houses in Rio, who had come to the

country to keep Sunday, and this day, which was also a holiday. They were playing at quoits, and other games of violent exercise, under a burning vertical sun, and drinking strong bottled porter to cool themselves. It was rather a curious sight to observe, with what pertinacity our countrymen adhere to their old habits, in the most incongruous places.

We all dined together, in a large room, at three o'clock; and here, for the first time, I saw a genuine Brazilian dinner. It consisted of salt fish, with onions, at one end; at the other, salt fish, hashed with vegetables, and in the middle a large tureen of feijão preto, black beans, stewed in toucinho or hog's lard, and beside it a broad platter of farinha, or the meal of mandioca; this, in look, was like coarse lime, and in consistence like hard sawdust; and when the black beans were mixed in, it really had a very odd appearance, and reminded me of the Irishman's simile of "clocks crawling in lime;" its taste was hard, coarse, and raw. For drink we had abundance of bottled porter and port wine, with native caxas, fine and transparent like water, and in taste resembling Scotch whisky. Our host informed me it was a wholesome and excellent cordial when taken raw, but he warned me against mixing it with water.

Opposite the venda was an open copse, covered with brushwood. Here I entered to collect insects, which abounded in it; but I was called back, and warned of danger. I thought of serpents, and made a precipitate retreat, but I found the danger was from a smaller, but nearly as serious a cause. Among the insects of the country is a kind of tick, called carapatoo. This is exceedingly venomous; it has six hooked and sharp claws, with which it readily clings to any passing object, and it is furnished with a proboscis of a singular structure. It consists of a pencil of bristles, serrated inwards, forming a terebro or piercer, with which it instantly penetrates the flesh of any animal, to which it has adhered by its claws, and burrows its head in the wound. When entering, the bristles expand, forming a triangle, of which the base is inside, so that it opposes a resistance to extraction, which it is sometimes quite impossible to overcome. If it is suffered to remain, it gorges itself with blood, till it becomes bloated to an enormous size; if it be extracted forcibly, so as to separate the head, it remains festering in the wound, and as it is exceedingly irritating and acrid in its quality, it causes a violent inflammation, which degenerates into a foul and dangerous

ulcer: frequently the mere puncture produces an inflammation, by which the glands of the limbs absorbing the poison, become swelled and very painful. The late king suffered severely from a carapatoo.

These horrid insects, which are the plague of the country, as bad as any of those of Egypt, are sometimes so abundant, that herds of cattle perish by their attacks. They are so tough that they cannot be bruised, so vivacious that they cannot be drowned, and so adhesive that they cannot be separated; so that it was in vain to place the cattle in water, or use any other expedient. When I came out, one was found on my neck, in the act of perforating the flesh with its proboscis, but it had not time, so it was easily extracted. It was about the size of a large bug, with a grey mottled skin, which was so coriaceous and leathery, that no bruising would kill it, and it escaped. Some others were caught in the evening, and they were all destroyed by the only method effectually practised — holding them on the point of a pin in the flame of a candle.*

* The castor-oil tree is called in this country Carapatoo, from the resemblance the seed bears to this tick. It is remarkable that it was called by the ancients Ricinus, and κρότον, for the same reason.

In the evening, a Brazilian gentleman rode up to the door. He was a dark comely man, with a large straw hat, tied round with a broad many-coloured ribbon. He wore a jacket of rich flowered cotton, white pantaloons, and fawn-coloured boots, with large silver spurs. He was a country squire of the neighbourhood, and his mode of living afforded a good picture of the Brazilians of his class, in the vicinity of the city. He owned a large tract of land, and among others, the unreclaimed thicket, of which the carapatoos had taken undisturbed and undivided possession. The rest of his land was equally in a state of nature, and lay useless, except that it supported a few cows, from which, and a few negroes, he derived his whole subsistence. The cows' milk was sent every morning to Rio, a distance of fifteen miles, on the heads of his negroes, who returned in the evening with the produce, and brought him back each three or four patacs. The labour of these journeys was so great, that the blacks frequently sunk under it, and died on the road; and their master was content to live on the produce of his cows, thus disposed of, when he possessed the means of raising a large fortune.

We left Iraja the next morning at five, and had not proceeded more than a few miles, when

our tall, pensive mulatto disappeared, with our mule and baggage, at the turn of a road. It was some time before we missed him; and as he was to be our guide through the country, we could not proceed without him, so we turned back to search. We soon lost our way, and came in front of a large conical hill, which it was evident we could not pass over. When arrived at its base, we found ourselves in the midst of a very extensive fazenda. It consisted of a large and respectable mansion-house, in a well-cleared demesne of several hundred acres, all under cultivation, and containing within itself all the produce of Brazilian husbandry. First, meadows of capim, or Guinea grass. This very productive vegetable was introduced, with slaves, from Angola, on the coast of Africa, and is a real benefit to the country. It has a leaf two inches broad and a foot long, and the culm rises, like cane, to the height of ten or twelve feet, if standing upright. It is planted by cuttings from the joint, and is exceedingly vivacious and prolific, yielding large and successive crops of sweet and succulent fodder, and so rich and enduring, that it gives the country an aspect of perennial verdure in the most arid seasons.

Beside this meadow of capim, were large plantations of mandioca, which resembled a grove

of castor-oil trees, having large digitate foliage on branching stems, rising to the height of four or five feet. I had come to Brazil with my mind impressed with strong apprehensions of this dangerous vegetable, from the accounts of Father Labat and others in the West Indies. They say the raw root is so deleterious, that it brings on immediately a fatal torpidity, of which the patient dies, unless kept moving or dancing, and so the plant is a vegetable tarantula. There is no trace of this in Brazil, and it is either one of the *speciosa miracula* of the good fathers, or soil and climate have so altered the nature of the plant, as to deprive it of qualities dangerous elsewhere. The poison, they say, resides in a volatile substance, which is exhaled by heat, in the process of preparation; but the same may be said of a potato, which no one thinks of eating raw, and I was informed that pigs feed with as much impunity on one as the other. Mandioca meal is the great farinaceous food used in all parts of Brazil, and for that reason called *κατ' ἐξοχὴν, farinha.* The root from which it is prepared, resembles a large irregular parsnip.

On the side of the hill, was a very extensive plantation of cana, or sugar cane. When mountain ground is reclaimed by burning the

woods, the first crop is usually sugar cane; which is seen shooting up every where, with its green stems among the dark ashes, and black trunks and branches of half-burnt trees. The first appearance of the plant resembles tufts of aloes, from which the culm, or cane, shoots out to the height of eight or nine feet. In this state the plantations are very beautiful; and gave to the sloping face of the hill before us, the aspect of a grove of the richest verdure, laid down in ornamental lands.

Near this, on the same declivity, was a coffee plantation, the dark shining foliage of which was strongly contrasted with the vivid transparent green of the cana. The bushes rose to the height of nine or ten feet, from another grove of ornamental ground, but of an aspect and character very different from the former. It had a sombre and solitary cast. The stems were covered with dark green berries, which become red, and are gathered in February—a second crop follows in August. When pulled, they abound with a whitish, milky looking pulp, between the cuticle and the seed; they are spread out to dry on mats till the pulp hardens; they are then thrown into a mill, where the whole husk is separated, and the clean seeds packed in long baskets, each containing five

arrobas, or one hundred and sixty pounds; and in this state sent by droves of mules to Rio, for consumption or exportation.

Besides these, there were large fields of milho, or Indian corn, bordered with broad beds of feijão preto; and, occasionally, long rows of bananas, with their enormous and singular foliage. In a large fallow, in the midst of this green amphitheatre, were from eighty to one hundred negroes of both sexes; some with infants strapped on their backs, in a rank, breaking up the ground for fresh crops with hoes. This implement was a broad pointed blade of iron, stuck at the end of a pole like a flat shovel, set at right angles with the handle. With this, they all struck with the regularity of soldiers drilling for the manual exercise, and cut the ground into square blocks, about twice the size of bricks. Over them presided a tawny-coloured driver, in a cotton jacket and large straw hat, with a long rod in his hand, by which he directed their industry, and punished the idle. The whole scene before me presented such a complete picture of a tropical farm, where both the face of nature and the produce and mode of cultivation were objects so unusual to the eye of a European, that I sat some time on my horse, contemplating it, with surprise at the

novelty of the scene, and with pleasure at the susceptibility of this noble country, and the prospect of what it will become, when it is all brought into a similar state of cultivation.

We called to the superintendant, who very civilly came up to us, and pointed out the right road, which we had entirely strayed from. We wound round the base of the hill, and in about an hour arrived at the venda of Jacotinga, the genuine Indian appellation, which it still retains. The venda was a large warehouse-looking place, selling every thing like a village shop in England. Among other commodities, I observed shelves of books, which I went behind the counter to examine. Among them were fourteen volumes of the Old and New Testament, and two or three of the Arabian Nights, in Portuguese, which the vendeiro pointed out as a valuable and curious acquisition to his library. We could get no refreshments here but dry rusks, or rolls of wheaten bread baked hard, to keep like biscuits. On rummaging about the shop, I discovered a pile of small deal cases, and on opening one to see what it contained, I found it was a delightful conserve of quince pulp and sugar, made in the Minas Geraes. This pleasant addition we spread on our rusks, and made a hearty breakfast. The residence stood in a wide rich

plain, surrounded by an amphitheatre of green hills, covered to their summits with large forest trees. Nothing could be more secluded and solitary than this lone retreat, which seemed the only human habitation within any accessible distance; yet this shop was the emporium, from which the district was supplied, with all that the people wanted. As yet we had seen nothing like a village in the country; all the habitations were single houses at considerable distances in a wilderness; and this in a rich country, within twenty-five miles of the capital, where for three centuries the people had abundant time to increase, and abundant space to occupy.

From hence we made our way to Venda Nova, a place of entertainment newly built, on the high road, in which we now again found ourselves. We hoped our mulatto might have arrived here with our mule, but we could learn no tidings of him. We resolved to wait for some time, in hopes he might come up, and called for coffee; but in the midst of a country, where thousands of acres were covered with this plant and cana, not a grain of either coffee or sugar was to be had at an inn. We were persuaded to try some carne secco, which was dressed for us, but after a fruitless effort at mastication, we gave it up in despair, and

agreed that the Irish were not far wrong in calling it sole-leather. To mend our fare, a negro appeared with a deep basket full of land crabs. These disgusting-looking insects were of a cylindrical shape, about half a foot long, of a poison-looking green hue, and soft pulpy shells; but they were particularly distinguished by large claws, and long eyes projecting from the shells, which they rolled about in all directions.* The basket was emptied into a pot of boiling water, but we felt as little disposed to feed on them dressed as raw. They were brought from the salt marshes, where the day before we had seen their young and other species in such myriads.

Next came an old free negress, with a young slave of her own sex and colour, carrying a bundle. She was very talkative; and when she found we were English, went on with great volubility, endeavouring to pronounce the names of all the English she had known at Rio, and seemed proud of the extent of her acquaintance. Her young slave was her only property, and she made a good livelihood by hiring her out as a beast of burthen, to whoever wanted her, and for whatever purpose. Many persons,

* Cancer ruricola.

black and white, about Rio, live in the same manner. They possess a single slave, whom they send out in the morning, and exact at night a patac. They themselves do nothing, lying indolently about, and living on this income. Whatever more the slave is able to get, goes to his own support. This mode of life gives rise to infinite dishonesty and petty theft, as the slave, on pain of the severest castigation, is obliged to procure the money *perfas et nefas.*

I had occasion to remark in this place the exceeding fecundity of nature which characterizes Brazil. There stood in an open green before the venda, a large tree, which was covered with an infinite variety of animal and vegetable life. The stem was perforated and burrowed into, by thousands of ants of various shapes and sizes, who formed sundry colonies in different places, and were all moving about with their accustomed industry and activity. From the larger branches above were hanging like bags, various nests of moribundos (different kinds of wasps and hornets), who covered the upper parts like a cloud, while they moved about those pendant cones. In the higher smaller branches, various birds had built their nests, particularly the amoo, a large black bird, and sundry kinds of smaller ones, bentivis

and beijaflors, who fluttered over the blossoms in a continued circle. Nor was vegetable life less exuberant; from every part hung down different parasites—tilandsias, stapelias, epidendrons, and a variety of other air plants—on arid parts of the stem, deriving their sustenance solely from the atmosphere, blooming in exceeding beauty, with their transparent succulent stems, and rich scarlet blossoms. This sapless tree was instinct with life; and I counted fifteen different species of animal and vegetable existences, supported on the withered branches.

Having heard nothing here of our absent guide, we were obliged to hire another to conduct us to São Pedro, at the foot of the great Serra, where we intended to pass the night, and yet hoped to find him. Here we arrived at seven in the evening, and learned nothing of him. The country, from hence to the sea, had latterly been infested with a banditti of discharged sailors and soldiers, and they had, but a short time before, committed several depredations; so we took it for granted our mulatto had fallen into their hands, and had been either attacked and robbed, or gone off to join them, a circumstance which his wandering habits rendered not improbable. He had on his mule all our means of travelling, including our money;

so we had no alternative but that of returning in the morning.

Our lodging for the night was very comfortless. It was the property of, and kept by, a Senhor Francisco, the cousin of a Brazilian marquez. He was himself an uncommonly handsome man, six feet six inches high, and muscular in proportion; but his dress and appearance was that of a beggarman. His coat was a very ragged jacket, of rusty black stuff, and his pantaloons, of dirty cotton, were equally ragged, through both of which his shirt hung out in ribbons. His head was covered with an old shapeless straw hat, and he had neither shoes nor stockings. Notwithstanding his athletic size, his motions were singularly indolent and lazy, and his whole delight was in lying stretched in the sun; notwithstanding this, he was gentlemanly in his manner and conversation. His venda was not in better order than himself. It consisted of a very dirty shop, in which provisions and ragged wearables were lying about in the most disgusting confusion; a kitchen next it, in which were two or three very dirty negro wenches; and inside, a room for sleeping, where bags, barrels, and filth of all kinds were heaped up; and in one corner was an old rush-bottom seat, which was the cama, or bed. The whole

ragged edifice was built of poles, set upright, to which split bamboos were bound horizontally by sipo, a tough creeper, used in the country for the purpose, and, therefore, called Brazilian nails: the intervals were filled up with blocks of mud the size of bricks, dried in the sun; these had shrunk up, leaving an open interval round them, through which the wind entered and the sky was seen, so that the wall resembled a check apron, with cross-bar lines of light.

The attendants were in perfect keeping with the house and accommodations. The cook was a little black woman, christened Luzia, who was twenty years old, and four feet high. She was tattooed in a singular manner. The flesh of her forehead and nose was curiously raised up into protuberances the size of peas; these formed a line across her forehead, and another from that down to the tip of her nose, like two strings of large black beads; and, to make the resemblance more complete, a similar bead-like ring went round her neck. These curious protuberances were as hard and consistent as warts, and must have been attended with considerable pain in the operation; but it was performed when she was so young, that she had no recollection of it. Her diminutive person was singularly dirty, her only covering being a very

offensive tattered shift, as black as soot; so that in colour, stature, and appearance, she exactly resembled a young sweep. Her habits were accordant to her person. While preparing a fowl for us, she seemed to have a particular affection for the entrails, which she carefully laid by for herself.

Curious to learn some particulars of the history of this creature, I found, on inquiry, she was from Mozambiqüe, and one of that diminutive race from the south of Africa, that partake of the stature of a pigmy and the habits of a Hottentot. It is remarkable, that the most highly prized negroes are those which are blackest in colour, and are born nearest the equator. They are the largest and strongest in person, the most active in movement, and the most intelligent in understanding. As they approach the south, the race degenerates, and there is a gradual deterioration of the faculties both of body and mind, when the colour is less black and more tawny. Since the treaty which prohibited the importation of slaves to Brazil, from any place north of the equator, the trade has been directed to the south, and the latter importations have been of a feeble and diminutive race, from the region on both sides of the Cape of Good Hope, and called by the

general name of Mozambique; and of these, Luzia was a perfect specimen. As the breed is so inferior, they are sold proportionably cheap; and, therefore, our parsimonious and ragged host purchased her, and one or two more of her country, for his establishment.

Having eaten sparingly of the food prepared by our poor handmaiden, we placed our saddles under our heads for pillows, and with no covering but our cloaks, we lay down to sleep. In a short time, I felt something crawling over me, and soon found I was assailed by a legion of carapatoos, which occupied the crevices of the walls, and that the house was as prolific in insects as the tree. After endeavouring to destroy some, I fell asleep through fatigue; but in the morning, I found several were firmly fixed by their probosces in my flesh. These Luzia undertook to remove. One or two she was able to extract, by a dexterous application of her fingers, attended with much pain, for the skin followed the insect to a considerable stretch before it separated. Whenever one was extracted, she held it up to the light: if it had its proboscis perfect, she laughed, said *ta bo*—"good," and then put it into the fire. One broke and left it behind, which afterwards caused me much pain and inflammation. She

treated the remainder, which could not be detached, in a curious way:—She cut the body in two with a pair of scissors, and then applied snuff to the adhering part; in some little time, the insect feeling rather uneasy after such an operation, began to move, gradually retracted his fangs, and dropped off.

At a little distance from the house was a large rancho, or shed; and as this place is the great thoroughfare which leads over the mountains, it was full of muleteers and their cargoes. Near the rancho, was a great number of poles set upright in the ground, and to these the mules were tied, eating their provender. Under the shed were piled up their cangalhas, or panniers, and their cargoes of salt or coffee, ranged in regular order for the company to which they belonged. In the midst was a fire on the floor, over which was a triangle of sticks, and from this was suspended the kettle, preparing food for the men. Beside this, was the tropero, or leader, in his hammock, suspended on low poles, and round him was his troop, stretched on the ground. The rancho was large, and contained several of these groups, which had a very picturesque appearance.

As this was the only road by which Patricio could pass into the Minas Geraes in this direction,

and we could hear nothing of him, we gave him and our luggage up as things we were never likely to see again; and we were just preparing to set our faces again towards Rio, when our mulatto and mule appeared, descending a hill, with every thing safe about them. His mule had tired just after we had left Iraja, the morning before, and, as is usual with these animals, lay down on the road, and refused to move: he, knowing her habits, lay down beside her, and quietly waited till she got up again; and, having heard of us, pursued us to S. Pedro. I felt as if I had injured honest Patricio, by doubting his integrity, and tried to make it up, by a greater feeling of good will towards him. We now got ready to depart, not for Rio, but with great satisfaction turned our faces to the pile of mountains that stood before us.

The muleteers also were now in motion, loading their mules for the ascent, and we all set out together. First advanced the leading mule, a large and portly animal, and highly decorated with rings and head-bands, ornamented with beads and gilt knobs, having musical bells suspended at each side of his head, and a tall pyramidal tassel issuing from between his ears. He was followed by the rest, in a long line,

with their cangalhas, generally loaded with salt, every three or four attended by a negro or mulatto, with a straw hat and cotton drawers, and who carried in his hand a calabash full of black feijaõs, bedded in white farinha, which he ate as he went along. Next followed the tropero, a tawny Brazilian, on a little horse, with a large-brimmed felt hat, a long puncho, that fell over him and his pony, and huge silver spurs on his naked heels. Horizontally on his saddle, was laid a long gun, the butt and muzzle of which appeared at each side, from under his puncho cloak. It was quite picturesque to see these troops, winding their way up the face of the vast mountain that rose before us, and to hear the harmonious jingle of the bells echo from the hollow glens.

Among those who ascended the serra, was a lady and her attendant. She was dressed in a riding jacket and petticoat of nankeen, and a large straw hat tied, not under, but across her chin. She rode in long stirrups, astride, like a man; and in her holsters she carried a pair of pistols. She was not followed, but preceded by a negro in livery, on another horse, who was her avant courier. Though not a robust or muscular person, she

seemed stout and careless,—dismounted like a man before us, without the smallest embarrassment,—took a glass of caxas at the venda, to fortify her against the mountain air,—remounted,—examined her pistols, to see that all was right for any event she might be liable to,—and again set off, her own protector. Such figures are very common in the country. The wives of fazendeiros are frequently left widows, manage by themselves, afterwards, the farms and slaves, and in all respects assume the port and bearing of their husbands.

Before we set out, our indolent, ragged, but intelligent host, pointed out to me a plant which was growing in a marshy spot not far from the rancho. This was the ticu palm,* which the Brazilians are beginning to use as a substitute for hemp and flax. The leaf is long and exceedingly fibrous, covered with small spines. When bent in the middle, the ribs of the leaf, which are very brittle, crack and separate; the ends are then drawn down at each side, and leave a series of strong fibres of the best quality behind them, which are very applicable to the purposes of manufacture. The tree is fifteen or twenty feet high, and the stem

* Bartris acanthocarpos.

as thick as the wrist, divided into joints, with a circle of spines round each. It yields also an acid fruit, which grows in clusters on the summit of the stem. It consists of a stone covered over with a pulp, and enclosed in a purple skin, so that it is very like a bunch of purple grapes. The fruit is cooling and agreeable on a hot day, and is sometimes made into vinegar. The stone exactly resembles a cocoa nut in miniature, and contains a kernel within also. It is sold in the streets of Rio, and called coco ticu. The Brazilians expect to find it a substitute for flax and hemp.

From the Atlantic Ocean at Angra, commences an irregular semicircle of mountains, forming a sweeping chain of about 150 miles; cutting off the lower and more fertile lands of the coast, and forming the first great barrier of the interior. This is called by different names in different places; and where we crossed it, the Serra d'Estrella; though that name is peculiarly applied to the more eastern part of the ridge. This serra, though not fifty miles from the capital, is still nearly in a state of nature; and I now for the first time entered the primeval woods of America, which remain precisely in the state they were left by the receding waters of the flood. I had heard

much of the grandeur and sublimity of an American forest; but the reality exceeded my conceptions. The road, or rather path, winded along the edge of deep vallies and ravines, from the bottom of which trees shot up to a most extraordinary height; and some of them could not be less than 400 feet.

There is a continued contest for light and air in the vegetable world; and when numbers of trees are together, they all shoot up with emulation to out-top their neighbours; and when they have attained that eminence, many of them begin then, and not till then, to send out lateral branches. In this region, where the vital powers of plants are so strong, the contest is carried on with wonderful vigour, and the sap ascends to an incredible distance from the root. In some places, where either by design or accident the wood had been burnt down, an insulated tree perhaps escaped, and stood by itself in solitary magnificence at the bottom of a glen; it was then that its gigantic proportions, and the curious structure that accident had given to the process of vegetation, were conspicuous.

I had the curiosity to leave the path, and ride up to one of those solitary giants, to contemplate it more closely. The stem had run up

without putting out a single lateral shoot, till it had ascended above its fellows; and then it pushed them out horizontally, forming a canopy of branches over their heads; and when they were burnt away, the canopy still remained, but at such a height, that I could but indistinctly see that part of the stem from which the branches issued; and they looked like a little forest suspended in the air.

Sometimes a tall tree had lost its branches, from fire or some other cause, and the immense stem was covered with climbing plants, which had shot up from the ground, till they had surmounted its summit, and terminated in a point at the top; and the whole slender cone of vegetation resembled a very tall cypress—the long pole that supported so many plants, being itself dead and sapless.

Some of these creepers had grown up with a young tree, increasing in size along with it, till the two stems were of an equal thickness—the tendrils of the former twining round the neck of its supporter, by a band as dense as the cap of the cross-trees of a man-of-war; and then shooting above it, like the top-mast from the main-mast.

When we arrived at the summit of the ridge, we remarked another circumstance in the

prolific soil of the country. At the place where vegetation ends in other regions, it was here in its greatest luxuriance. This vast ridge, I found, was not a chain of rock, but enormous mounds of clay, having a stratum of vegetable soil a thousand feet in depth. It is only necessary, therefore, to burn down the woods which encumber the ground, and the sloping surface is every where convertible into the richest gardens. We found the very summit treated in this manner. The Marquez de S. João Marcos, who owns large estates in these mountains, has every where begun to cultivate their sides. We crossed an extensive patch, of many hundred acres on the highest point, just opened in this way; and we emerged from a primeval forest, into a rich plantation on the very top of the mountain. Much of the burnt timber was yet encumbering the ground; but between the trunks which lay prostrate, rich plantations of mandioca, milho, and cana, were shooting up their vivid green stems. One of these newly planted tracts had a singular appearance. It was a deep circular cavity, like the crater of a volcano; last year it was a mass of enormous timber, shooting up from the bottom, till the tops of the trees were nearly on a level with the road. It was now a huge cup of rich

sugar-cane. The constant humidity of this elevated region gives a security to the vegetation of crops, which they have not always below, where they sometimes fail; and did so this year, for want of rain. Our way led round the edge of this crater; and while I looked down into it, and saw the means of human life thus extended in such a place, which a profusion of useless vegetation only had before occupied, perhaps, since the flood, I could not help feeling the highest respect for the patriotic man who had conceived and executed such a project.

There are many such enterprising agriculturists now in activity in the country, among the native Brazilians, whom the late king and the present emperor have most judiciously ennobled; conceiving that the highest honours should be conferred on the best benefactors of mankind. The proprietor of this place is one of the most distinguished; he was created a baron by Dom John, and a marquez by Dom Pedro. This ennobling of farmers, which I have heard Europeans laugh at, and call a prostitution of title, appears to me to be highly proper and praiseworthy. In the present state of society in this country, the agriculturist is the promoter of its best interests; and he who causes

a blade of esculent matter to grow where it did not before, deserves and ought to be rewarded by such honour and distinction, as the government can confer upon him; not only as a remuneration for his deserts, but as an encouragement for others to follow his example. The highest nobility in Europe do now, and those of Brazil will hereafter, date their distinction from the labours of their ancestors in the field; but in the eye of reason and religion, my friend, which is the most estimable title—that derived from the destruction of human life, or that from its preservation—from him who wasted populous places, or from him who planted populous places in a waste?

We then descended the serra, and arrived at the lovely valley which lies on the other side. Behind the first great chain is one of less extent, enclosing a semicircular area of small dimensions, but of surprising richness and beauty. Through the centre of it winds a large stream, fertilizing it with its pure and limpid current; and beside this water stood the house of the Marquez de S. J. Marcos, which presented a very simple and farming appearance. It was a long barn-like white-washed edifice, with irregular windows; and there was neither garden nor enclosure to ornament it. It was surrounded by an

irregular village, of eighty or ninety houses, or huts, in which the slaves of the estate were located. All the inmates of both sexes were scattered over the sides of the hills about us, hoeing or forking, while the children, left to themselves, were scampering about the green, or swimming like Newfoundland dogs in the river. The appearance of this place contrasted sadly, not only with the romantic and picturesque scenery in which it stood, but with the cultivation and improvements which were everywhere creeping up the mountain around us.

The conferring titles of distinction in this country, however gratifying to individuals, and applying an incentive to deserve them, has in many instances operated very unfavourably to its best interests. Those on whom they are bestowed, are involved in unnecessary expenses, from which they would be otherwise exempt. Attendance at court brings with it a show and profusion, which exhaust their means; and living at 'Rio abstracts them from the necessary attendance at their fazendas. Almost all the nobility are greatly embarrassed in their circumstances from this cause; and it deprived this patriotic marquez, I was told, of the means of providing a decent house for himself, though so highly improving the country about him.

We met here his two sons riding to Rio. They were fine handsome boys, elegantly appointed in their horses and attendants; and whatever deficiency there was in the house, there was none at all in the personal show and display which their rank demanded.

From hence we proceeded along a lovely and fertile vale, watered by the river and its branches. Among the many beautiful shrubs and flowers which adorned these banks, was the datura,* which attained the height of ten or twelve feet: the blossoms were of a prodigious size, some of them hanging down in snow-white bells, nearly a foot long, and covering the branches with the greatest profusion. All the banks of the rivers were thickly clothed with this highly-prized ornament of our conservatories. Toward evening we arrived at the large rancho of Botães. At some distance was the mansion of the fazendeiro who accommodated us with a quarto and cama, chamber and beds, at his own house. It stood on a rising ground, and commanded a sweet pastoral view of the valley below, which our host was bringing into a good state of cultivation. He was a grey-headed, corpulent, good-humoured old gentle-

* Brugmansia candida.

man, who received us cordially, and in a short time set before us a smoking dish of roast pork and onions, with the constant accompaniment of feijaõ and mandioca meal. While at dinner, a negro girl who attended us, seemed fraught with some important intelligence, and continued to look mysterious, grinning with her white teeth, and making signs which neither my companion nor I could comprehend. We afterwards discovered, that it was connected with a curious trait of Brazilian manners.

The old man and his wife had no children, so they sent for a brother's child to keep them company, and manage their family. This young lady was very comely; and having the prospect of a good inheritance from her uncle, she thought right to look out for some agreeable and worthy partner to share it with. My companion, possessing these requisites, had caught the eye of the fair Victorina; and not having an opportunity of speaking to him herself, had communicated, by means of the attendant slave, her partiality for him, and an intimation that, if he was actuated by similar sentiments, she would marry him, and share with him the inheritance she expected from her good uncle. I was greatly astonished and amused by this communication, but he was not; he knew it to be not at all uncommon, in a country

where ladies are very susceptible; and, from the secluded situations in which they live, have but few opportunities of selecting a partner, who they think would make them happy; and when one occurs, they do not let it pass, but are prompt to avail themselves of it. This deviation from the established etiquette of European usage, does not convey any imputation of want of delicacy on the part of the ladies. Victorina was as modest as she was comely; she sat in the remote part of the house with her aunt, superintending her domestic concerns, and seemed retiring and diffident, and not at all disposed to attract the admiration of any other person than him, on whom she had fixed her affections. And had my friend been disposed to settle himself in this rich vale, she would no doubt have made him a good and amiable wife.

Before we departed, two Brazilian gentlemen arrived; one of them was a member of the guard of honour from the Minas Geraes, and was returning, after having served the term of his attendance on the emperor's person. He was exceedingly indignant at some disrespect shown to the corps, and seemed to speak the sentiments of all the rest. The enthusiasm which caused the first establishment of this body had now subsided, and a growing feeling

of dislike to a service, which abstracted them from their business and their homes, to a great and inconvenient distance, was generally felt and expressed: and this was greatly increased by the manner in which they had been treated. Some of them, he said, either from carelessness or by design, had not cherished their whiskers, which are considered essential to military costume. They were all sent to the Ilha das Cobras, and kept confined in the fortress till they grew to the military size, and not allowed to be at large till they were fit to be seen. On the day of presentation, also, they were, as they said, very injuriously treated. It was usual for them only to attend as far as the Campo d'Acclamação, and there be dismissed; but from hence they were compelled to proceed to S. Christovão, like a guard of common troopers, and then discharged with as little respect, in a very abrupt and unceremonious manner. These things did not seem to deserve much consideration in a military point of view; but it seemed very injudicious to treat a number of spirited and independent gentlemen, possessing so much influence in the country, as if they were common soldiers; and so to alienate their good will, and entirely indispose them to the service they were called on to perform.

Among the aids of industry about this fazenda, the old gentleman had a very rude and primitive machine for grinding or rather pounding milho. The grain was previously steeped in water, and then thrown into a large stone mortar the size of a churn. Over this was a long and heavy beam of wood, supported near the centre by the fulcrum of a high post; at one end was a pole shod with iron, at right angles with the beam; at the other a large trough. Into this trough, a stream of water conducted from a hill, fell out of a long spout. When the trough was filled, the beam at that end descended, till the inclined position caused the water again to run out, and then it recovered its horizontality; and the iron-shod pole, at the other end, descended into the mortar, where a negro sat beside it, to throw in grain and push it under the point. This most clumsy and inefficient machine was exceedingly slow in its operations. A great quantity of water, which at some times in the year is very precious, was unnecessarily expended, and a man's labour was nearly lost the whole day in watching its slow operations. Yet this is the only implement for pounding mandioca and milho, the two great essentials of life in this country, and it is one of the effects of slavery. Several attempts were made at Rio to introduce

machines to abridge manual labour, particularly at the custom-house; but as this would enable them to dispense with the hire of slaves for the same purpose, it was resisted and discouraged by all the proprietors. The same feeling exists in the country, where they are sometimes at a loss to find employment for their numerous black establishments.

Our way the next morning lay across low ridges of a serra, which were still more beautiful than the first, and displayed still greater marks of that improving spirit, which seems, every where we passed, alive in Brazil. The sides of the mountain were cleared by fire, and the vegetation of useful esculents substituted for forest trees. All along the road, new ranchos and vendas were about being erected, and we passed those of Graminho, Matta Cães, and Bassura; almost every mile of the road presented us with a Brazilian inn, the rancho of which was crowded with mules and muleteers, and round the doors droves of black cattle, proceeding from the interior to the coast, either for the consumption of the increased population of Rio, or for the shipping in the harbour. When we consider that it is but a few years, comparatively speaking, since these roads to the interior were opened; that the mountains here were

the great barrier, behind which the rich province of the Minas Geraes lay, a kind of terra incognita, approached only by a long and circuitous route in another direction; we are astonished at the spirit and energy of improvement which the present state of things has called forth. These wild and solitary mountains were actually now as populous with passengers, and commodities of every kind, as any of the roads of England, not near the capital, or other large city.

We now descended these second ridges, and came to a more level country forming the valley of the river Parahiba. On approaching its banks, it had become dark, and we could not distinguish objects; but our attention was directed to the sounds of industry all about us, which seemed to proceed from forges at work; and we heard the continued strokes of hammers on the anvils, and saw a succession of sparks struck from the heated iron. On inquiry from Patricio, he said they were the ferradors or smiths; and I was glad to see so extensive an establishment of these most useful artisans, and a manufactory of iron implements set up in this infant part of the country. On a nearer approach and closer inspection, however, we found no forges, and nothing at the side of the road but a marsh, which extended to the river. The

smiths were bull frogs, called by the Brazilians ferradors, from the exact resemblance of their croak to a man striking a bar of iron on an anvil; and the sparks were, not scintillæ proceeding from the operation, but fire-flies glittering in the marsh, and darting from the frogs who feed on them. The deception was very complete; and in no circumstance, I suppose, did objects of nature so exactly resemble those of art, as these now presented to us. A cruel amusement, I was told, was sometimes practised on ferradors, in South America. A bull frog is brought to a forge, and he is made to catch at real sparks of fire proceeding from the iron, supposing them to be the fly, his natural food.

When we arrived at the bridge of the Parahiba, we found that we were too late to pass over. In Brazil, all journeys are suspended at the Ave Maria, that is, the vespers to the Virgin, that commence after sun-set. Instead of a curfew, this period is announced in the country by a very simple and beautiful circumstance. A large beetle* with silver wings then issues forth, and announces the hour of vespers by winding his solemn and sonorous horn. The Brazilians consider that there is something sacred in this coincidence; that

* Pelidnota testacea.

the insect is the herald of the Virgin, sent to announce the time of her prayer; and it is for that reason constantly called escaravelho d'Ave Maria, or the Ave Maria beetle. On the hill of Santa Theresa, I have heard it of an evening, humming round the convent, and joining its harmonious bass to the sweet chant of the nuns within, at their evening service.

Though the hour was now past, the toll-keeper of the bridge, who knew my companions, very civilly suffered us to cross, after paying a toll of eight vintems for each man and horse, and we slept at a venda on the other side. The river here is about one hundred yards across, shallow, and full of rocks. Notwithstanding this, when the flood comes down in the rainy season, it is a powerful current, and frequently carries the bridge, which is of wood, away with it. This long and rapid river issues from a small lake not very far from the ocean, in the province of Rio de Janeiro, about five leagues from Paraty, and from the serra of that name; and after receiving the tributary streams of Parahibuna, Piabunda, and several other considerable rivers, and forming several cataracts, particularly near its mouth, it falls into the Atlantic to the north of Cape Frio, having made a circuit from sea to sea, nearly through the whole province, of about

four hundred and fifty miles. Its whole course is distinguished by the rocky ledges over which it winds its way, scarce navigable for canoes, and by the sugar-cane plantations which adorn its banks. The valley of the Parahiba, which lies, generally speaking, between the parallel chains of Paraty and Martiquera, is about eighty miles in breadth, intersected with several minor branches of these great ridges, and we now proceeded to cross them.

When setting out in the morning I perceived a large wound in the neck of my horse, from whence issued a stream of blood. Alarmed, lest he should have been stabbed, or wounded maliciously, so as to disable him from proceeding, I inquired into the cause, and Patricio informed me it was occasioned by the morcego. This is a large bat, which, like the devil of Surinam, attacks both man and beast. When a party under Çabeça da Vacca were exploring the sources of the Paraguay in the year 1543, they attacked him in the night and seized on his toe; he awoke and found his leg numbed and cold, and his bed full of blood; they at the same time eat off the teats of six sows. They fix on the thumbs or great toes of men; and the rumour of the country is, that while they suck the blood through the aperture they make, they

keep waving their sooty wings over their victim, to lull him to a death-like repose, from which he never wakes; and in the morning he is found lifeless, and the floor covered with pools of coagulated blood, disgorged by the vampire when full, to enable him to extract the last drop of the vital current. They sometimes grow to the size of pigeons. One of these horrid animals had attached itself to the throat of my horse when he stood in a shed, and clasping his neck with its broad sooty wings, had continued to suck till it fell off gorged with blood; and if not timely driven away, might have left him dead in the morning. They reckon in Brazil no less than eighteen kinds of morcego, nine of which are voracious blood-suckers.

The country before and behind us was very beautiful, both up and down the river. As we advanced we came into a richer vale, where stood the fazenda of the Marquez de Baependi, I think, another of those noblemen, who, I am informed, had derived his titles principally from his improvements, as a landed proprietor and agriculturist. In the same district, lay certain lands, which had formerly belonged to the Jesuits, and, when they were expelled, had fallen to the crown. This immense estate

commences where that of the Marquez de Baependi terminates, and consists, it is said, of ten square leagues; and is at present in dispute between the crown and the present occupants.

We now began to ascend the third ridge of mountain which intercepted our way since we left Rio. The ascent was very gradual, and was called, not the serra, but the mato of the Parahiba. Mato, literally, means thicket, hills or flats, covered with trees of a smaller growth. The improvements which we had hitherto passed through, seemed here to terminate: the woods were uncut or unburnt, and the sides of the hills, with very few exceptions, were left entirely in their primitive state. Among other marks of this, we were hard beset with tribes of monkeys and parrots, which kept up a loud and incessant chattering, as they climbed the trees, or fled across the road, as if they were scolding us as intruders into this their natural and undisturbed domain. They never were seen single, but always a number together. The road was also perforated and burrowed with armadillos, which have not yet been expelled by cultivation from this region. The way, nevertheless, was crowded with droves of mules and herds of cattle, and, for the first time, we saw a few sheep; they were lean and ragged, with very

large horns, as if they all were rams; we were told they were going to Rio for the use of the English, who, no doubt, did not find them equal to south-down.

In about three hours we ascended the highest ridge, and, from the summit, saw the plain and valley at the other side, having in the midst of it the town of Valença, the first collection of houses we had seen in the country since we left Rio. What a remarkable proof of the tardy progress of population under the old system, when, after a lapse of three centuries, but a single town had been built within 100 miles of the capital! About ten o'clock we arrived at it.

This was originally an aldêa, that is, a village where civilized Indians are located. They consisted of four tribes; the Puris, of a dark colour, and diminutive stature; the Araris, who are fairer, and of a more robust and larger frame; the Pittas, and the Xumettos, who all originally inhabited the valley of the Parahiba. These retain their distinctive characters, and the Puris and Araris are still pointed out by their size and colour. As a mark of civilization, they cut their hair short, and no longer let it remain hanging long, lank, and loose over their shoulders, nor are they to be distinguished by their dress.

The present town consisted of about fifty or sixty houses, with a church, built without any regularity, on the side of a hill. At the bottom was the inn, or estalagem, as it was called on a sign-post at the end of the house, and it had some pretensions to the name; we were shown into a dining-room fitted up neatly with green gilt chairs, table covered with oil-cloth, looking-glass, and window curtains. I desired to wash, as a refreshment, for the day was very hot, and they brought me a flat, square, shallow dish with water. I asked for soap, and they pointed out a particle of what appeared to me brown clay, about the size of a pea, stuck on the edge; they then brought me a head of Indian corn; on opening the leaves I found it filled inside with a soft brown earth, which, I was informed, was sabaõ, or soap. It was manufactured with the ashes of the bassura, or broom plant,* which abounds with alkali, and is used in preference to any other for the purpose; it is the weed most difficult to eradicate from their pasture lands, where its many stems grow up, and its yellow blossoms cover the surface, like ragwort in our fields. It is cut as well for brooms as for alkali. The earthy saponaceous substance manufactured

* Sida lanceolata.

from it, smeared our hands and face in a most filthy manner, and we could hardly wash it off again.

Our breakfast was soon sent up, which consisted of a large hot dish of pork fried in oil, a smoking platter of boiled greens, a copious bowl of feijaõ preto stewed in abundance of toucinho, and a pan of fried eggs. This fare accorded so ill with the burning heat of the day, that we turned from it with great disgust, and requested a little milk to make some tea, but none was to be got. It was rather extraordinary, that though we met many thousand head of cattle on the road, and saw cows in all directions grazing on the natural pasture of the hills, we could not procure a drop of milk, though we inquired for it at every house. The inhabitants did not appear to make any use of it, and butter was an unknown substance. This was worse than even my experience in Turkey, where all other preparations of milk, except butter, are always to be had in abundance. To console us, however, our host provided a large jar bottle of Portuguese wine, of an excellent quality, which he kept, he said, for his friends. The dust and cobwebs were blown from the cork, and we were regaled with some admirable red wine, which our talkative attendant, whose tongue never

ceased, continued to praise with extraordinary perseverance.

A scene now presented itself highly repugnant to European feelings, particularly those who witness it for the first time. We had overtaken on the road several troops of slaves, bought at Rio, and driven like sheep into the country to be sold at the different villages. A market was here opened, just before the inn door, and about thirty men, women, and children were brought there. The driver was the very model of what I had conceived such a fellow to be. He was a tall, cadaverous, tawny man, with a shock of black hair hanging about his sharp but determined looking visage. He was dressed in a blue jacket and pantaloons, with buff boots hanging loose about his legs, ornamented with large silver spurs. On his head he wore a capacious straw hat, bound with a broad ribbon, and in his hand was a long whip, with two thongs; he shook this over his drove, and they all arranged themselves for examination, some of them, particularly the children, trembling like aspen leaves. He then went round the village, for purchasers, and when they arrived the market was opened. The slaves, both men and women, were walked about, and put into different paces, then handled and felt exactly as

I have seen butchers feel a calf. He occasionally lashed them and made them jump to shew that their limbs were supple, and caused them to shriek and cry, that the purchasers might perceive their lungs were sound.

Among the company at the market, was a Brazilian lady, who exhibited a regular model of her class in the country. She had on a round felt hat, like an Englishman's, and under it a turban, which covered her head as a night-cap. Though it was a burning day, she was wrapped up in a large scarlet woollen cloak, which, however, she drew up so high as to show us her embroidered shoes and silk stockings; she was attended by a black slave, who held an umbrella over her head, and she walked for a considerable time deliberately through the slaves, looking as if she was proudly contrasting her own importance with their misery.

On turning away from a spectacle, where every thing, though so novel, was so revolting, we were accosted by a man with a gaudy flowered silk waistcoat, who spoke a little English, and said he was a German Doctor, settled in the aldêa. He informed us, that the people in the neighbouring valley treated the slaves with the greatest inhumanity. They allowed them but a scanty portion of farinha or

feijaõ, and never any animal food; yet on this they compelled them to work fourteen hours a day, exposing them to the alternations of heat, cold, and wet, without the smallest regard to health, comfort, or life. The consequence was that the deaths exceeded the births in such a proportion, that if it was not for the constant supply sent down in this way, the negroes of the district would soon become an extinct race. He himself possessed two slaves, which he kept alive and healthy by a different treatment, which he recommended in vain to his neighbours to adopt, even for their own sakes, if not for that of humanity....

We left Valença about one o'clock, and proceeded through a romantic and irregular country in which improvement had made but little way, and arrived in the evening at Rio Bonito, or the beautiful river. This does not justify its name; it is muddy, discoloured, and choked with fallen trees, and the rancho, and all connected with it, was in a denuded marshy plain, very dirty and neglected. The master, notwithstanding, like our ragged host at S. Pedro, was an opulent man, and had made a purchase of a tract of land, extending for a square league about him. We could get no room of any kind to sleep in, as the open shed of the rancho was the only

accommodation afforded here for passengers; but the evening was very cold, after a hot day, and we wished for some better shelter. At length, by great favour, we were permitted to lie down on the clay-floor of the venda, which we found swarmed with bats and rats.

The rats in this country are of a most savage breed: living in the woods, they acquire the ferocity of other animals of the forest, and are considered as formidable. Twenty negroes, belonging to a gentleman here, had been nearly eaten alive by them. The poor men had been so tired with work, and had slept so sound, that their toes were nearly eaten by a legion of rats, before they cried out; and such accidents are very common. We had scarcely commenced our supper, when these animals began to stir about us in all directions, excited probably by the food. We spread on the ground a coira, or bull's hide, and stretched ourselves on it. Stuck in the mud of the ragged wall, was a little iron cresset of oil, with a wick for a lamp, which gave a dim light, sufficient to see the dreary place in which we lay. Presently we perceived the rats issuing through the crevices of the walls about us on all sides, and the bats, disturbed from their places above, began to fly from their concealments. On looking up

towards the roof, I think I never saw a more dismal and portentous aspect than it presented. Several of these horrid vampires were silently floating and wheeling over us, and the broad shadows of their sooty wings were continually seen gliding along the walls and rafters. Presently the light went out, and we were left in the dark with these companions, and imagined every minute we felt the rats at our feet or the bats lighting on our faces. We immediately got up, drew on our boots, leather caps, and gloves, and being thus prepared for bed, we again wrapped ourselves in our cloaks, and fatigue subduing fear, we fell asleep, and awoke in the morning without loss of blood.

The first object we saw on going out, was a poor cow before the door. She had been shut up under the same roof, and divided from us only by a mud partition; all her legs were lacerated by the rats, and in her neck were several deep punctures, made by the bats, from which the blood was still streaming; and there she stood before us, a goary example of the ferocity of our nocturnal companions. Several cows in this place had lost their teats, which the bats particularly fasten on.

We set out in the morning, at seven o'clock, from Rio Bonito, which, notwithstanding its

name, is, with every thing about it, by far the most odious and dismal place we had seen. We supposed we had now passed all the serras, and should have met with level ground, but we again ascended, and the country still continued a successive chain of hills, covered with forests. Among the trees which here attracted our attention, were the different species of bamboo, some of which were of enormous size, and some of singular beauty. Of the first kind were many which measured two feet in circumference, sending out large lateral branches, and so tall as to resemble forest trees. Others of equal magnitude, without any branches, shot out a single stem, divided into regular joints, smooth and tapering to a point, till they attained to an immense height. Some were not so thick, but ran up till they became so slender, that they bent down, gradually tapering to a very fine point, as thin as a horse-hair, and waving across the road like long fishing-rods. I cut one of them, which had shot up from the valley below, about the middle, where it was not quite so thick as my wrist. After carrying it for some time in my hand, where it felt lighter than a cart-whip, I laid it along the road, and measured its length, when I found it fifteen yards long, so that the entire plant must

have been ninety feet, tapering and polished the whole way with the most exquisite finish. A fourth species was smaller than the rest, and threw out from the joints a variety of stems, as thin as catgut, and from the points, at the extremities, issued long lanceolate leaves; this was so prolific, that it covered the whole surface of the forest, climbing to the tops of the highest trees, and clothing them with the most exquisite verdure. As we rode along the side of a glen, this plant had sometimes covered the opposite face, where it ran from tree to tree, till the whole sloping surface was covered with a level uniform curtain of the richest drapery. This vegetable substance is highly useful to the people; it is called capim do mato, or grass of the thicket. Whenever a company stop at a rancho, near where it is found, the negroes are sent off to cut it, and it affords to the horses and mules the most rich and succulent provender; and to the cattle in the neighbourhood, a supply of green and wholesome fodder at all seasons.

We now came to a cross, erected by the roadside, on the burnt stump of a tree, on which was laid an offering of fruit and flowers; this was to mark where a man had been found murdered. These crosses are very common,

and they have been mentioned as a proof of the insecurity of the roads, and the frequency of murder and robbery committed on them. But this is a most erroneous conclusion. Crosses are often set up to mark a road, or fulfil a pious vow, though no death has occurred; and where a dead body is found, from whatever cause it may have proceeded, a cross is placed to mark the spot, though the person should have died a natural death, or have been killed by accident or by lightning; and even when a murder is committed, it is seldom perpetrated by a robber, but more frequently arises from the irritability of the blacks, or still more frequently of the mulattos, who accompany the troperos. They all carry large knives, with broad blades, terminating in a long sharp point, called facas, as an indispensable instrument for a variety of purposes; but they are the most dangerous and deadly weapons that can be conceived. Near the handle of the blade, is an aperture, the shape of a heart; in a quarrel with each other, they are always prompt to draw this dangerous weapon, and readily plunge it up to the figure of the heart in their antagonist's body, on the slightest provocation. Edicts have been issued against the use of these knives, but they are still made at Birmingham

and Sheffield; and I have seen large cases of them open at the custom-house. It was with a weapon of this kind, and on such an occasion as I have mentioned, that the man was killed, over whose body the cross we now saw was erected.

At some distance from the cross, was a flight of black vultures hovering in the air, and floating round the mountain over a particular spot. When we arrived at it, we found the carcase of a mule on the road, on which they were preying. This is a very common occurrence. When an overloaded mule lies down, he often never rises again. The muleteers take off the cancalha, and leave the dying animal to the vultures, whose instinct in "scenting their murky quarry from afar," is very remarkable. Before they have time to consume the body, it becomes very offensive; but no one ever thinks of turning it off the road, till its remains are trampled in the mud. The vulture is called by a name which signifies scavenger, because it carries away the offal.

About twelve we arrived at Rio Preto, or the black river. It here runs through a beautiful valley, formed by two others meeting at this spot, from each of which currents of pure limpid water tumble down in cascades from the

mountains above. The river is very considerable, being seventy yards wide, and crossed by a wooden bridge, about twice as long. It is justly called Black Water, from its uncommonly dark, but not muddy stream. The water, as it passes under the bridge, is shadowed with dark masses, which float through it, like clouds in the sky. It rolls along a broad deep current, unimpeded by any obstruction, and very capable of navigation; and it runs through an exceedingly rich and fertile country, with verdant swards lining its banks. From these natural advantages, it is likely to become a place of consequence; and, accordingly, on the opposite side of the stream stands a very pretty town, already consisting of sixty or seventy white-washed houses, having two or three spacious streets, and evincing a neatness and comfort, which we had not witnessed before, since we left Rio.

The Rio Preto is here the boundary of the province of Rio de Janeiro, and the town at the other side is the first in the Minas Geraes. It is, therefore, appointed by government as the place where the toll is collected, and all goods examined, passing from one province to the other. At the foot of the bridge, on the other side, was a very large rancho, filled with pack-

ages of every kind, under inspection. Here our goods were deposited, and we were conducted, by a little dark Brazilian, in a blue uniform, and rich gold epaulets, to the office, where, for the first time, our passports were examined. Mine being very unusual, excited much speculation; it was handed about the office, and studied with profound attention by the people there. In paying the duty, we proffered the notes which circulate through the province; but they would not be received. They had cunningly established the toll-house on the Minas side; and so, having just passed the boundary line of circulation, where notes are not a legal tender, they insist on being paid in coin, and so make from 20 to 40 per cent. on copper, and from 60 to 120 on gold and silver, according to the state of discount.

While the tolls were adjusting, I walked to the other side of the bridge, and was about to enter a house, to ask a question; but a policeman first shouted, and then ran after me, to stop me. He informed me that the bexigas, or small-pox, was in that, and some other houses, and they were all put in quarantine, as the disorder was here considered with as much alarm as the plague in Turkey. Notwithstanding this, the people of the place have

not yet overcome the prejudices against vaccination, and the only precaution government can take, is to shut up the infected houses, and interdict all communication.

On my return, I was surprised to meet a boy with an enormous tumour in his neck, exactly similar to the goitres of the Alps. It had, moreover, the same effect on him. He was weak in intellect and diminutive in person, and seemed in all respects to resemble the Cretins. This, I heard, was an exceedingly common complaint in this part of the country, and through all the Minas, where it is called papos, and is generally attended with the same concomitants, both mental and physical. It attacks not only men, but cattle; cows are very often affected by it. It is attributed by the people of the country, as usual, to some quality in the water;* but by others, with as much probability, to want of salt, an article in this part very scarce. The rich, they say, who can procure this necessary article, are not at all so subject to papos as the poor; and they told me many stories of persons afflicted with the complaint

* This opinion is as old as the time of Pliny, who says it attacks not cows, but pigs as well as men. "Guttur homini tantum et suibus inlumescit, aquarum quæ potantur plerumque vitio."—Lib. II. cap. 37.

in the interior, cured by going accidentally to some sea-shore. A boy from the Minas was sent on some occasion to Rio, with an enormous tumour on his throat. When arrived at the sea, he drank the water, not aware of its quality, but found its saline taste so great a luxury, that he continued to take it every day while he remained; his tumour gradually subsided, and he returned to his friends quite cured. The European term goitre is derived from *guttur*, the throat, which the Brazilian term *papo* also means; and it is the opinion in Europe, that it is occasioned by drinking snow-water. It is impossible that this could be the only cause; for here it exists to a great extent, among people who never saw, and, perhaps, never heard of snow, and had no more notion of the existence of such a thing, than the King of Siam. It seems, however, to be confined to mountainous regions.

The people apply to the tumour a poultice of gourds, and drink, as an alterative, water which has stood over the powdered earth, formed in the interior structure of ant-hills. This is found to be tempered by a glutinous secretion from the insect, of an acid quality, which may be powerfully medicinal. In general, however, no remedy is used, as it does not always affect

the health, and is not considered a deformity—*quis tumidum guttur miratur in alpibus?* This is particularly the case with corpulent ladies in the Minas Geraes, where it is often connected with the *majorem infante mamillam.*

In the evening we arrived at the fazenda of Funil, kept by a young Brazilian woman, to whom the land all round appertained, as her paternal property. She was corpulent and very good humoured. We found her in the act of making toucinho. A disembowelled pig was lying on its back, and one of her slaves was scooping it. Presently he extracted every thing but the fat, and the pig retained its shape without a particle of bone or flesh. Her cow, also, had just calved; so for the first time we obtained the luxury of milk, and made some tea. Our hostess requested to taste it, as it was a thing she had heard of, but never seen before. She took it without cream or sugar, and then requested a cup for her niece who was not well. The people in the interior of Brazil still regard it only as a medicine to be sold, as formerly, in apothecaries' shops. In the evening a neighbour came in with his Spanish guitar. He sat with our hostess in the room next to that where we slept, and continued to play with great perseverance till morning. The music was wild

and sweet, and soon lulled me to sleep; but I awoke several times in the night, and still the indefatigable minstrel continued his serenade to his mistress.

The next morning we were concerned to find Patricio was unable to proceed. One of the mules had kicked him in the side, and another had trampled on, and lacerated his foot, and he had yet scarce recovered from his severe illness at Rio; still he wished to press on, but my companion would not let him. We were, however, here joined by two other negroes, with loaded mules, who had been sent on before, and we set out with them. It was Sunday morning, and it struck us that we should not pass the day without performing its duties. We left the road, therefore, and entered a lofty wood beside it. Here, having found a suitable spot in a deep recess, we knelt down; and, like the first Christian missionaries in the new world, offered up our devotions in the solemn temple of woods and mountains: and I confess to you I found the usual feelings of piety on such occasions, still more exalted by the sublimity of the natural objects around us. It is not improbable that the Church of England service, was never performed in these forests of South America before.

We now began to ascend the Serra Negra,

and the woods and mountains about us exhibited a dark and lurid appearance we had not before seen, and growling thunder was heard at a distance. In a short time the whole atmosphere became involved, and the lightning burst out in all directions. Nothing was wanting, but this explosion, to complete the sublimity of the gigantic forests and towering mountains around us. Flash succeeded flash, followed by constant crashes of thunder, so vivid and loud, that the woods seemed in a blaze, and the mountains felt as if shaken under us. The echoes were so extraordinary, that the sound came to our ears as though it had issued from all the points of the compass. We had humbly addressed the Almighty just before, and it seemed as if now his awful voice was replying to us, from every part of the heavens.

The thunder was succeeded by rain, and we descended the other side of the mountain, followed by a deluge which poured down after us. We passed the ranchos of Souza and Dona Anna; and in the evening we arrived at Rio do Peixe, or the River of Fish, drenched with wet. Our wish was to have a fire; the rain was very chilling, and for the first time in Brazil I felt cold; but a fire in the house was a thing unknown, nor is there a chimney

in the country. As the rainy season had now decidedly set in, and we might look forward to be exposed every day to such drenching torrents, without the means of being again dried, we resolved to adopt Captain Parry's plan, to reserve a change of dry clothes at night, and put on our wet ones every morning; and to this precaution I think we were much indebted. Our lodgings were as miserable as could be well conceived; a wet clay floor and ragged walls, open to wind and rain. As the place is called Rio do Peixe, we hoped to get some fish for supper; but though the river abounds with them, no one would take the trouble to catch them. We rummaged out a coira to keep us from the damp clay; and notwithstanding Mr. Willis's caution, I made some caxas into hot punch, which I believe was not without its use; we then lay down, and were surrounded by our nocturnal visiters. The rats crept up and down the walls, and the bats hovered over us with their shadowy wings, but we did not suffer from their attacks. We rode in shoes, and reserved our dry boots to draw on with our leather nightcaps, going to bed.

We set out the next morning in a deluge of rain. As we advanced, the signs of cultivation were few; no woods cleared on the

road side, and the march of improvement seemed to have been arrested before it had advanced to this distance from the capital. We passed the ranchos of Rosa Gomez and Capitão môr, and proceeded up the serra of Mantiqueira, which here opposed its barrier of vast forests clothing the sides of lofty mountains, where our limited view was lost in dense woods. But about twelve o'clock the face of nature suddenly changed its aspect. After a long steep ascent up the sides of a thickly-wooded mountain, we gained its summit, and from thence there burst on us a view at the other side, singularly contrasted with that which we had left behind. The mountains and forests suddenly ceased, and before us extended to the distant horizon a country without a hill or a tree. It consisted of undulating plains of various elevations, entirely denuded of wood, but clothed with the richest verdure; and the sudden transition from one state of nature to the other was very striking. This region of Brazil is called the Campos, and our future road lay across it.

On looking back from this elevation on the country we had left, we saw it an immense region of mountains in nearly parallel ranges of one hundred and fifty miles, over five of which we had crossed; and they were all

covered, with the exception of a few scanty patches, with primeval forests, which seemed undisturbed since the earliest periods. For the first time, in the year 1798, it was proposed to make a road through them from Rio, and so penetrate to the rich province of the Minas, by a more direct route than the inconvenient and circuitous one hitherto used; and commissioners were appointed to carry it into execution as far as the Rio Preto, the boundary of the province. The road we had passed was then, for the first time, pushed through this hitherto impassable wilderness, and it seemed in several places to have been well constructed, and laid down with stones or flags on the more difficult passes. But since that time it was neglected; the constructed parts had fallen to pieces, and the materials lay about, encumbering the way, and rendering it still more difficult.

The Indians were even then the occupants of the woods, and were generally found resident on the banks of the rivers and streams, which intersected the country. An elderly gentleman, who was secretary to the undertaking, informed me that it was necessary for the commissioners and workmen to go constantly armed, to be protected against their

hostility. The Puris lay on the river Parahiba, and others on the streams which fall into it. During the administration of the Marquez de Pombal, these people were protected; and it was decreed that no Indian should be reduced to a state of slavery. This created such a feeling of security, that they lived in the vicinity of whites with confidence. By a mistaken humanity, however, permission was afterwards given to the Brazilians to convert their neighbours to Christianity; and for this laudable object they were allowed to retain them in a state of bondage for ten years, and then dismiss them free, when instructed in the arts of civilized life, and the more important knowledge of Christianity. This permission, as was to be expected, produced the very opposite effects.

A decree for the purpose was issued so late as the year 1808, by Dom John, and it was one of the measures which he thought best calculated to reclaim the aborigines, who had just before committed some ravages. He directed that the Indians who were conquered, should be distributed among the fazendeiros and agriculturists, who should support, clothe, civilize, and instruct them in the principles of our holy religion, but should be allowed to *use the*

services of the same Indians for a certain number of years, in compensation for the expense of their instruction and management. This unfortunate permission at once destroyed all intercourse between the natives and the Brazilians. The Indians were every where hunted down for the sake of their salvation; wars were excited among the tribes, for the laudable purpose of bringing in each other captives, to be converted to Christianity; and the most sacred objects were prostituted to the base cupidity of man, by even this humane and limited permission, of reducing his fellow-creatures to slavery. In the distant provinces, particularly on the banks of the Maranhão, it is still practised, and white men set out for the woods, to seek their fortunes; that is, to hunt Indians, and return with slaves. The consequence was, that all who could escape, retired to the remotest forests; and there is not one to be now found in a state of nature, in all this wooded region.

It frequently happened, as we passed along, that dark wreaths, of what appeared like smoke, arose from among distant trees on the sides of the mountains, and they seemed to us to be decisive marks of Indian wigwams; but we found them to be nothing more than misty

exhalations, which shot up in thin circumscribed columns, exactly resembling smoke issuing from the aperture of a chimney. We met, however, one in the woods, with a copper-coloured face, high cheek-bones, small dark eyes, approaching each other, a vacant stupid cast of countenance, and long, lank black hair, hanging on his shoulders. He had on him some approximation to a Portuguese dress, and belonged to one of the aldêas formed in this region; but he had probably once wandered about these woods in a state of nature, where he was now going peaceably along a European road.

We had passed through Valença, one of these aldêas of the Indians of the valley of Parahiba, christianized and taught the arts of civilized life. Another, called the Aldêa da Pedra, is situated on the river, nearer to its mouth, where the people still retain their erratic habits, though apparently conforming to our usages. They live in huts, thatched with palm leaves; and when not engaged in hunting and fishing, which is their chief and favourite employment, they gather ipecacuhana, and fell timber. They are docile and pacific, having no cruel propensities, but are disposed to be hospitable to strangers. Their family attach-

ments are not very strong, either for their wives or children, as they readily dispose of both to a traveller for a small compensation. They are about 300 in number, and still use their primitive weapons, bows and arrows. With the exception of a few aldêas, and a very small space, extending in a few places for a mile or two, on each side from the way, the whole of this region remains in its original state of nature; and from the way by St. Paul's, to the Strada d'Estrella, a distance of fifty leagues, or two hundred miles, it is still a primitive forest, impossible to be penetrated by a traveller, and totally bereft of inhabitants, either civilized or Indian.

The descent into the Campos was long, and the road narrow, steep, and dangerous. We at length arrived at the bottom, about mid-day, and stopped at Pisarão, where we got some refreshment. We now entered the plains, and the first impression was, that of their exceeding beauty. They were not level, presenting an irksome flat, like those of Hungary, Poland, and Russia, which I had passed over. They sometimes swelled into considerable eminences, separated by glens and ravines. The elevations were covered with the richest sward, and the glens we found were

wooded with smaller trees and flowering shrubs. Imagination created hamlets and cottages, embosomed in these sheltered vales; and it only wanted sheep and cattle grazing on the slopes, to give it the appearance of the richest pastoral counties in England. Another circumstance also, which added to their beauty and fertility, was the number of rivers with which they were intersected. In the course of our progress this day, we crossed five considerable currents of water, besides many trifling streams; and it seemed to us, that such a country, and in such a temperate climate, must be peculiarly adapted to the grazing of sheep and cattle of all kinds, independent of agriculture. Yet all this lovely region, which nature seemed to have created ready for the use of man, without labour or preparation, was without inhabitants of any kind. We saw nothing that had life, but ants and armadillos—the first erecting large conical mounds, like miniature tumuli on the plains of Thrace; and the latter burrowing beneath them, and occasionally scampering from one to the other.

In fact, it was not till the year 1810, that the road we now travelled was opened. It had stopped at Rio Preto; but in that year it was continued on to S. José, and these fine downs

were first made accessible to human industry. They were then found, as they are now, a perfect solitude; no traces of Indians or black cattle, though it might reasonably be supposed that the latter, which had spread to such an extent over the other grass-covered regions of South America, would have at length spread themselves here also.

Among the trees which clothed the glens, was one which seemed peculiar to this region, and which I had seen no where else, the Chilian pine.* It generally stood distinct from other trees, with its singularly imbricated dark foliage, in large tufts at the ends of the branches; the older leaves having fallen off, left the remainder entirely bare. This, I believe, is the only individual of the pine tribe found in Brazil, and no where else but in the Campos, at least I never observed it among the almost infinite variety of trees, which the forests we had passed presented to us. Here it was very abundant, and attained to a considerable size, measuring twelve feet round the stem, but by no means exhibiting the majestic aspect of its noble relative, the pine of Norfolk Island;† indeed, I greatly doubt if they ought to be classed in the

* Auricaria imbricata. † Auricaria excelsa.

same genus. ' It is used for planks, and serves all the purposes of deal timber in Brazil. But the richness of the plain surpassed in the magnitude, variety, and vivid hues of its flowers. Bulbs of various sizes were swelling above the soil, protruding their succulent stems, crowned with bright large bells, and a thousand other kinds, the highly-prized ornaments of our greenhouse, were here scattered about the grass, with the most varied profusion.

After several hours' ride through this beautiful solitude, we at length met one or two scattered houses, and a few cattle straggling among the flowers; but we saw on a hill an immense flock of sheep whitening its sides, and we were well pleased to perceive they had at length applied the pasture of these downs to their most appropriate use. But when we arrived among them, we found the flocks were nothing more than hoary tufts of a species of wild oats, whose bending heads, at a distance, much more resembled a feeding sheep, than the barometz of Tartary resembled a lamb. Our disappointment at this deceptive sign of civilized life, and its wild and preternatural appearance, seemed to render the plains still more desolate and solitary.

But the circumstance that most attracted my attention was the ant-hills. These were conical

mounds of clay, raised by the industry of their inhabitants to the height of ten or twelve feet; I rode close by several which were considerably higher than my head on horseback, and nine or ten feet in circumference. The exterior coat is a yellow hard clay, but on making a perpendicular section, the inside is found divided by a number of horizontal floors, or stories, of a hard black earth, in thin plates, shining sometimes like japan-ware. These are inhabited by myriads of large brown ants, who are capable of exuding a viscid fluid, which tempers the clay to the moisture necessary to form those floors. Some species make covered ways in this manner, and I have seen tubes, or tunnels, of a considerable length, by which they pass and repass, unseen, from one habitation to another, for a considerable distance.

They sometimes migrate, and their progress is attended with extraordinary circumstances; they then go straight forward, devouring every thing in their way, like a flight of locusts. A garden near Rio obstructed their line of march; they found a stick accidentally lying across a deep ditch of water, which they used as a bridge, and continued to pour in such myriads by this passage, that in a few hours the garden was full of them, and every thing green disappeared.

From hence they proceeded on, till they met the house of Mr. Westyn, the Swedish chargé d'affaires, and they made their way through it. He told me he was suddenly awoke in the night by a horrid sensation, and on jumping out of bed, he found himself covered with these insects, whose crawling and biting had awoke him. The whole house was full of them. Impelled by some extraordinary instinct, they continued to advance till the whole body passed through, and the next morning there was not one to be seen. In their progress they devoured every other insect. Spiders, cock-roaches, flies, and every similar thing of the kind that infested the house, became their prey, and when they disappeared, all other insects disappeared along with them. I have seen them frequently take up their abode in a large bamboo, and every joint of the long cylinder was a separate colony swarming with an ant population.

To the ant-mounds of the Campos, the negroes attach an extraordinary superstition. They call them copim, and they say they contain a toad, a serpent, and a bird; that the toad eats the ant, the serpent the toad, and the bird the serpent, who then flies off, and leaves the copim empty. We saw several of them in that state, the interior all falling away, and nothing

remaining but the crust. We discovered, however, another cause for it. The armadillos have here burrowed every where over the plains, and their holes are full as numerous as the ant-hills. They frequently perforate below the copims, and getting inside, devour the ants, and destroy the structure of their habitation. We discovered one fellow in the very act; he immediately bolted, and we pursued him. I think I never saw a droller chase; the awkward speed of the animal, so unfitted for running, and the eagerness of the negroes, who every moment threw themselves on him, to endeavour to keep him down. At length we captured him. His head resembled that of a pig, with a flat circular snout, used, like a pig's, for the purpose of rooting up the earth. His body was clothed in a dense, tough, scaly coat, like that of a crocodile, which hung down over his sides, as the flap of a saddle, and so resembled a coat of mail, that the animal is justly called the hog in armour; and he was armed with very strong claws, by which he burrowed in the ground. I secured him in a bag, and had great hopes of keeping him alive, and of observing his habits.

In the evening, we arrived at the venda of José Gonçalvez, where we proposed to pass the night. The proprietor was a fazendeiro, and

owned a large farm all around him: but his inn was very comfortless and destitute, though it was the only one we had met with since we had left Pisarão, a distance of fourteen miles. There was no one to superintend it, but a very strange-looking negro, who answered all our inquiries for refreshment by *nada*—"nothing." A tropero, however, driving mules and cattle, had stopped here also, and they were preparing their supper at a fire before the door. He accommodated us with something, and our negroes managed to get something else; we then put on dry clothes, and lay down. We were not disturbed with rats or bats.

We set out in the morning in rain. As we always dressed ourselves in wet clothes, the first feeling was exceedingly chilling and disagreeable; but in a few minutes we became water-soaked with the rain from without, and the sensation went off. I had secured my armadillo the night before in a trough, with plenty of milho to eat, and laid over him a heavy beam; but in the morning the beam was removed, and he was gone. If he removed it himself, he must have been powerfully strong; my companion, however, attributed his disappearance to the ill-favoured negro. I was very much disappointed at his loss.

We passed the rancho of Juan Leite, and at mid-day arrived at Bestioga, the first, and, I believe, the only collection of houses in this part of the wide Campos; it consists of ten or twelve, scattered at irregular intervals over the plain. Among them was one highly acceptable to us; it was a decent comfortable venda, kept by a very obliging good-humoured man, who was quite attentive, and really glad to see us. He spread for us a coira, which must have belonged to an animal of extraordinary size. The general appearance of the oxen in the country is small, but some of the few that we met with on the downs, were of enormous magnitude; a proof how favourable the pasture is to the growth of cattle. The hide of the animal we now lay on, covered the whole floor of the apartment, and would have been a prize ox at any show in England. Our host spread on our carpet several dishes, among the rest some beef, the first we had tasted since we left Rio. Every thing else was clean and comfortable, and quite accordant to our European habits. In order to enjoy it, we changed our wet clothes, and, stretched upon our bull's hide, we devoured the only palatable repast we had yet met with. They dress all their hides in this country with the hair on. We saw several of them about

the village, in a state of preparation; they were expanded on elastic poles, stuck in the ground, which were continually enlarged, till the leather was dried and stretched to its utmost extent; in this state it makes an excellent carpet by day, and is the usual bed by night.

While at our repast, an enormous negress came in and sat down to look at us. She was the companion of our little host, and the mother of a number of mulatto children, who were to possess all the property of their parents. Such connexion, unsanctioned by marriage, is the usual domestic arrangement of all Brazilians of this class, particularly in the interior.

We again set out in a deluge of rain, and were soon water-soaked, notwithstanding our cloaks. We met some Brazilian travellers, who contrived to keep themselves perfectly dry with their simple covering. Their dress was a large slouched hat, which projected over their head and shoulders like a penthouse. Their cloaks were punchos of dark blue cloth, with light blue lining. They were nothing more than oblong pieces of woollen-drapery with slits in the middle, into which they thrust their heads; and the long side flaps fell down below their feet, while before and behind they were shorter, and just covered the saddles.

When they walk, they throw up the flaps on their shoulders, and the light lining forms an ornamental border. The rain ran down, and was thrown off as from the roof of a house; and by this simple contrivance they were perfectly dry, while we were wet to the skin, under London waterproof cloaks with double capes, made on the last improved construction.

In the evening we arrived at Ilhéos, which was also a well-inhabited village. It seemed remarkable, that the population of these regions should increase as we receded from the capital; but we were now approaching the mining district, which was early colonized, and from it population advanced to the contiguous parts of the Campos, and here in a direction not from, but towards the chief city.

Ilhéos was surrounded with gardens, in which peaches, vines, cabbages, and several fruits and vegetables of the old world were growing and flourishing. A large chapel stood on a rising ground, and several white-washed houses gave it the air of a comfortable and thriving village. The venda was kept by a learned man, who also kept a school; and when we entered his shop, our ears were saluted by the busy hum of children, all reciting their lessons together, in a room behind it. We went in among them,

and found ten or twelve boys, decently dressed, sitting on benches, all reading out at the same time. Their only books were letters, written to the master on various subjects of his business; and every boy had a thumb-stall carefully laid on the paper, to preserve the precious manuscripts. Their master was obliged to use this mode of teaching, as he had no books, and his pupils learned to read writing before print. Some of the letters were exceedingly obscure and badly written, and I think would puzzle any black-letter man in the Record-office. It seemed extraordinary that where printing is now so common, and so many journals and gazettes published and circulated, no elementary books of education should as yet be thought of. I promised the master to inquire at Rio for such things, and if I could meet with them to send him a supply, which he said would be the most grateful boon I could bestow.

Our supper was served up in unusual style; we had not only silver spoons, which one might naturally expect in the neighbourhood of the mines, but we had knives to cut our meat, an article of luxury we had not been able to procure in any house before, since we left Rio. That the orientals, who feed with their fingers and dispense with forks, should also do without knives,

is not surprising; but that Brazilians, who do not use fingers, but carefully convey their meat to their mouths on the point of a fork, should have no knives to cut it with, seems an extraordinary anomaly. Whenever we inquired for knives on the road, we were told the police prohibited their use! Yet every negro or mulatto slave carried one at his belt, with a sharp and deadly point, like that of a dagger, while freemen complained that they could not keep a faca de mesa, a table knife, in their house, to cut their dinner. We had also at supper a very beautiful conserve; this was the rind of the maracouja, which was a bright, rich, transparent green, of an excellent flavour. I wished to see the fruit which produced it, and our host brought me a branch with both fruit and flower. It was a species of hardy passion flower.* It appears to me that it would be a good substitute for the common kind we rear in England,† and which is seen in the front of every house, as it ripens very perfectly in all the hedges, though the temperature here, where large flat Dutch cabbages freely grow, is colder than that of an English summer. It might easily be introduced, and made an agreeable addition to our esculent plants.

* Passiflora incarnata. † Passiflora cærulea.

Our accommodation, in other respects, did not correspond with silver spoons and knives. My bed-chamber was a cold miserable shed, with damp and dirty walls, covered with cobwebs and carapatoos. In this place, I had the unusual luxury of a bed, stuffed with the leaves that form the calix of Indian corn, on which were laid embroidered muslin sheets, and a rich variegated quilt. Before lying down, a gamella dish, as large as a tub, was brought in full of hot water and caxas; and in this bath of punch I was bathed. This is a common refreshment in Brazilian houses; and I now had it for the first time, to obviate the effects of long-continued cold and wet. Notwithstanding these applications I passed a sleepless night; I had hardly laid down, when I was attacked with a legion of carapatoos, disturbed from the rustling leaves on which I lay tossing about, and a multitude of other insects, which were continually falling on me from the mouldy walls. This house had, notwithstanding, a considerable approximation to the convenience of an inn for travellers; and it is to be expected in this improving country, that the mixture of filth and finery, will be gradually superseded by a sense of uniform comfort and convenience.

We set out next morning in a deluge of cold

rain, and were soon very wet and dreary. The rains, which generally last with little intermission from November to February, that is, during the three summer months, are attended with various degrees of cold. Those which come with a north or west wind are warmer; those with a south or east are cold, and are called for that reason chuva fria, the cold rain, and they last for eight days. We had now passed three of these; and more cold or comfortless weather I never experienced in Russia, in the latitude of 60° north, in winter, than I did in this tropical climate at midsummer. We made a determination, however, to arrive at S. João, the end of our journey, this day; so we pushed on, through thick and thin, with our jaded horses. And here I had occasion to remark the physical superiority of a negro. One of our mules had tired, and was left behind; and my portmanteau was strapped on a black. To this arrangement I objected altogether, as I thought the poor fellow had enough to do to carry himself on foot, such a long and toilsome journey, without any incumbrance. He, however, wished it, and he set off at the top of his speed, and almost left us behind. We now found him of essential service, and his sagacity equal to

his strength. We were going over an immense elevated muddy plain, intersected with paths, and none of them distinct; and the rain was descending in torrents, with a fierce wind blowing in our faces. Our negro trotted on before, with the portmanteau on his head, much less tired than the horses, and, with a sagacity like instinct, wound his way, with unerring skill, through the intricate multitude of path-ways. The downs now assumed a different character; they rose into lofty hills, but still denuded of trees. One of these, called Monte Video, is a conical mountain, and our path led over the very point of the cone. To climb to the top of this in a storm of wind, and through a deluge of rain, was a perilous enterprise, and I supposed we could not accomplish it. We succeeded with much difficulty; and from the summit, as from another Pisgah, we saw our promised land.

Behind us was the Campos which we had crossed, about seventy miles wide. The country before us was a new region, and presented the face of nature under an aspect totally different from the two we had passed. It was neither clay mountains covered with forests, nor undulating naked plains; it was a land of bare stones, where immense walls of rock rose per-

SERRA AND CITY OF S. JOSÉ.

pendicularly out of the ground, running in right lines through the country, and intersecting it into vast compartments. Before us lay a long ridge of this rocky wall, skirting the horizon, and at the bottom stood the town of S. José, with its white houses and high church, having an extraordinary aspect of wildness and solitude, under the bare ridge of stone that impended over it. We again pushed on through the Morro das Morcejas, and arrived at our destination, at six o'clock in the evening, at the end of the tenth day, after a very dreary ride for the last twelve hours, without any rest or refreshment for man or horse. The hospitable mansion of my companion, however, soon removed all the effects of wet, cold, and fatigue.

The town of S. José stands on the right bank of the Rio das Mortes, and just at the foot of the rocky serra of that name, which rises perpendicularly from the soil, and runs in a straight direction, like a huge wall. It is of a trap-like formation, and the different and regular strata of stones give it a still more wally and artificial appearance, like the cyclopæan architecture in the east. The town is comparatively ancient, and was built in the year 1718. It consists of about three hundred houses, in several irregular streets, on the slope of a plain, which

declines from the base of the serra; and when viewed in certain directions, it looks neat and picturesque, as all the houses are whitewashed, and the country about is singular and romantic. The most conspicuous object is the Matriz, or mother-church of S. Antonio, which is considered the finest in the province, and stands in the most elevated part of the town. Besides this, there is a chapel, dedicated to St. John the Evangelist, and another to the Rosario, with one or two more smaller shrines, and this for a population of about two thousand persons. Among the curiosities of the town, is a large fountain, of antique structure, and excellent pure water, which the inhabitants prize very highly, and call it by way of eminence, Chafariz.

It is here the General Mining Association have established their operations. The house in which Mr. Milward resides was built by the former vigario of the parish, and is the best in the town. It is a specimen of the best style of building in Brazil; it has five large Venetian windows in front, ornamented with balconies and cornices. Within is a spacious and fine saloon, with several chambers leading from it, and a long corridor, having apartments for servants. The ceiling of the rooms is a species

of mat work, formed of split bamboo, called *tacwara,* crossed and painted in various devices, and it is a curious peculiarity of Brazilian houses. Below is a spacious court-yard, having in it a large bead tree.* This is found growing in the centre of every convent in the east, where the caloyers make beads of the ribbed seeds. It was transplanted by the Latin monks to South America, where the ecclesiastics seem equally to prize it. The vigario was so fond of it, that he raised a wall round the stem to protect it. The whole house, which was built for the padre by the gratuitous labour and voluntary contributions of his parishioners, is a proof that whatever vows he made, poverty and self-denial were not among the number, for it must have been a fine and elegant edifice when new; and indeed the houses of all the vigarios, I saw, were the best in their vicinity. It was sold, however, to the company, after the death of the proprietor, with a large tract of garden annexed, for about two hundred pounds.

In the front is a large green, intended to form a square, but the buildings meditated were all suspended, and many of the inhabitants emigrated from this place to St. João d'el Rey, which

* Melea zedaracht.

was rising on its ruins; grass was growing profusely in the streets; most of the houses were shut up; all trade was at a stand; and no other food could be procured but salt pork and black beans, with the exception of fowl, or an old cow, which was rarely killed, at irregular intervals; all the young cattle, particularly bullocks, being reserved for draught.

The arrival of the English mining company arrested the progress of its decay, and changed the face of things. So low was then the value of property, that a house might be had for five patacs per month; but since the influx of people connected with the mines, the same house lets for nine or ten milreis. Notwithstanding this, and that the value of every thing else is raised in the same proportion, the people here looked upon the strangers with an evil eye, and have not yet overcome the prejudice which an inundation of foreigners, of a different faith, excited in this solitary and sequestered place. This prejudice was greatly promoted by the present vigario, an ecclesiastic of the old school. He is now upwards of ninety years of age, and still cherishes all that intolerance which he received, near a century ago, as part of his education.

But whatever influence he exercises on the

lower classes, in this way, it has had no effect on those of a better description, among the chief of whom is Senhor Campos, the sargenté môr of the town and district. A few hours after our arrival, this worthy and intelligent person came to pay us a visit. He was an elderly corpulent man, with long greyish hair. He is held in high estimation, all over the Minas Geraes, for his integrity, and his opinions are much respected for his intelligence, insomuch so, that he is grown into this current proverb:—S. José is distinguished by possessing—

Tres cousas — Chafariz,
João Antonio, e a Matriz.

that is, three things — their church, their fountain, and their worthy magistrate, whose name is João Antonio. It was deemed a proper and prudent precaution by Mr. Duval, who first established the miners in this place, to secure the co-operation of this gentleman by appointing him to the situation of treasurer of the company, and they have found him, on all occasions, not only an intelligent, but an upright and trusty man. The next day, several other gentlemen in the vicinity visited us, and among the rest, the father-in-law of Senhor Campos, the capitão môr. He was a thin old man, with

long white hair, dressed in a flowered cotton frock, with a pole in his hand. They seemed cordial and sincere, and not at all affected by the prejudices of the vigario, and of this they gave us, on the following Sunday, a striking example.

All the persons engaged by the company are Protestants, except the negroes, and the greater part are German Lutherans. One of these, in descending the shaft of a mine, fell to the bottom, and was killed. This was the first death that occurred, and a request was made to bury him in the usual cemetery; but the vigario would not permit a heretic to be laid in consecrated ground. The gentlemen of the town disapproved of this, but it was a thing in which they could not interfere, so his body was deposited in the company's garden. On my arrival, his friends were anxious that the ground in which he lay should be consecrated by the funeral service, so I directed to have the grave opened for that purpose. The miners met at nine o'clock; we converted the saloon into a church; and, after morning service for the day, we walked in procession to the grave. Every one present took up a handful of clay, and at the words "earth to earth," threw it on the coffin, a mode of performing that part of the

service which seemed to me to be very impressive. On our return to the house, we found the capitão môr, and all the gentlemen assembled. They had heard of our intention of performing the funeral service, and had come to attend at it, to sanction it by their presence, and show their approbation of it; but by a mistake of the early hour, they had arrived too late to assist at it. This instance of liberality and good sense in attending on such an occasion a religious service of the reformed church, is a proof at once, that prejudice against heretics is hastening away, even in the most secluded places, and that the Catholic religion of Brazil is not of an uncompromising or prejudiced character. It was besides a pleasing proof of the good-will and harmony that was established between the strangers and all the respectable natives.

Besides the vigario, there are two other resident clergymen in the town, who do not seem to participate in his prejudices; one is a negro and the other a mulatto, both worthy men, but particularly the latter, who, I was informed, was a person of remarkable uprightness and simplicity, and of a very pure and moral life. He is counted an excellent musician, and has made considerable progress in both the theory and practice of music. His acquisitions, however,

in other respects were, as might be supposed, very limited. He called to see me, and, as I could not converse well in Portuguese, I addressed him in Latin, presuming that it was a medium of communication for all ecclesiastics of every nation, but the worthy man could not speak or comprehend it. I found, however, upon returning his visit at his humble apartment, that he had a collection of the classics, and a very fine copy of the Latin bible, which he prized highly, and endeavoured to read every day. He regretted that there were not more in Brazil in the vulgar tongue, and seemed surprised to hear me ask him, if there was any objection made to the people reading it. He said it was not commonly read, only because they had it not to read. I thought I should gratify him by giving him a coin or two of the Roman Emperors, particularly one of Constantine, the first christian monarch, which I happened to have about me, and which, it is probable, had never before been seen in Brazil, at least in this part. But when we endeavoured to explain to him the era in which they lived, and the number of years which had elapsed since the coins had been struck, he looked quite confused and puzzled, and could not grasp an idea of such antiquity. The Brazilians, in general, cannot go farther

back in their calculations of time, than the arrival of the royal family, the great epoch in their history, and which they have some confused notion was coeval with the creation or the flood. Their notions of geography are not much more enlarged. Most of the inhabitants of the interior of Brazil had wonderfully simplified the science of geographical and political statistics, by acknowledging only two grand divisions of the globe; one being America, and the other Portugal and its dependencies. They have indeed some indistinct idea, that there are such places as England, France, &c., but these countries were vassals of Portugal.

I have heard of several ludicrous instances of the simplicity which these people displayed in conversations between them and my friend Mr. Ducal, who, being almost the first Englishman that had been seen here, had a great stock of European, and to them marvellous, information to impart.

On one of these occasions, Napoleon was the theme of conversation. His military exploits had been heard of; "but was he not," inquired some of the party, "a general in the Portuguese service, who rebelled against our king?"

The old vigario, having been in Europe in his

youth, thought himself of course, and was considered, a man of superior knowledge and learning to all around him, and as such he would generally take a dictatorial share in these conversations, casting occasionally at our countrymen a glance, accompanied by a significant shrug of the shoulders, expressive of pity at the ignorance of his parishioners. England being one day talked of, the old gentleman expatiated on the beauty, civilization, and greatness of our country, of which he had had most correct information, during his residence in Portugal; and to give an idea of its extent, he wound up by saying, that of its many rivers, one called the Missisippi was so large, that the eye could not compass its width! Since the circulation of newspapers, however, which are every where read with avidity, these natural effects of ignorance and seclusion are gradually disappearing.

From his skill in music, the worthy mulatto padre is not only the pastor, but the organist of the matriz, where I went to hear him play on a festival day. He had got, from a friend in Rio, some English music, consisting of country dances and marches, the names or uses of which he did not comprehend; so he applied them to his church services, and it

was with no small surprise we heard him begin his andante with "the Duke of York's march," and conclude his allegro with "go to old Nick and shake yourself." This to us sounded exquisitely absurd and even profane, but it was not so to him or the rest of his auditors, who had formed no such association of ideas. It was a remark of a dissenting clergyman, that he saw no reason why Satan should monopolize all the good music, and he caused some hymns in his chapel to be sung to popular airs, without regard to their former profane connexion. The padre was not chargeable even with this, for he had no knowledge of their previous association.

The next evening we had a concert. There is a number of persons in this small town proficients in music; it is an art in which the Brazilians generally show feeling and skill. They go about and get up amateur concerts, and it is one of the most frequent amusements of the place. This evening it was held at the house of Mr. Reye, secretary to the company, and the beau monde of the town were present. Among them was the wife of the sargenté môr, (who had married her at the age of twelve, and had now five children, though she was not quite twenty,) and her sisters, one of them a young

bride, not fifteen, who had a little son. The ladies sat ranged along a wall at the end of the apartment, and the gentlemen along the opposite, looking at them. This is always the location of company, the men and women never having a nearer intercourse than across the room. The band consisted of ten or twelve persons, blacks and mulattos, who played on clarionets and horns; and among them, as leader, was the worthy padre, who now played the flute. We were favoured with the national hymn, both words and tune, in which all the company joined with great enthusiasm, and this was alternated by duets, between a colonel, an old man of eighty, and a captain, a mulatto. At twelve we parted, and the band accompanied us home, playing the national hymn.

The social and convivial intercourse of the town was formerly confined to a morning or evening visit, at the latter of which a cup of tea was sometimes offered, and this formed the utmost stretch of hospitality practised. It occurred to my friend, Mr. Duval, to give these people a specimen of different, if not better, ways and manners. A day was fixed, and Mrs. Duval issued invitations for an evening party. At three o'clock in the afternoon the company began to arrive, and at four, about eighty

persons, inhabitants of S. José and the neighbouring places, had assembled. The shutters were closed to exclude the glare of day, wax tapers were lighted, and a band of music, the leader of which was our worthy padre organist, began to execute various pieces. Amongst these was our "God save the King," which my friend had arranged for the band, and which was then for the first time heard in this remote corner of the globe. Trays of sweetmeats, fruits, cakes, wines, liqueures, lemonade and punch, were freely handed round and as freely partaken of, and at twelve the company sat down to supper, which being over, they returned to the drawing-room and resumed their seats. Endeavours were used in vain to induce them to dance, so recourse was again had to music, and to the circulation of the trays, which seemed to be as much attended to as at the commencement of the evening.

It was now three o'clock in the morning; the company had been assembled almost twelve hours; the musicians were nearly exhausted, and so was nearly also the stock of sweets, cakes, and wines; but as no symptoms of departure were discernible in any of the party, who all sat round the room with as much composure, as if they had but just arrived, it

88322

occurred to my friend, that perhaps the custom of the country might be, for the host to tell his guests when they were to retire. He therefore inquired of the sargenté môr, what was the usual hour at which parties broke up in Brazil. The old gentleman looked at his watch, went up to the musicians, and bade them *tocar huma retirada*, "play a retreat." They complied with his request, but had scarcely got through the two first bars of the air, before the company all started up together, took leave, and hastily dispersed, and in ten minutes the house was cleared.

The eight days of chuva fria were now past, and were succeeded by very delightful weather, and I availed myself of it to visit the vicinity of the town. We first proceeded to the Rio das Mortes, or River of Deaths. It is a large stream, crossed over by a wooden bridge, about 100 yards long, running through a country by nature exceedingly fertile, but rendered sterile by the art of man in searching for gold. Gold was known to exist in the country so early as 1543. The Indians made their fishing-hooks of it, and from them it was discovered that it was found in the beds of streams, brought down from the mountains. But the first ore found, by a white man, in this country, was

in the year 1693, by Antonio Rodrigo, a native of Thaubate, in the province of St. Paul's.

The Paulistas are particularly distinguished in the history of Brazil, by their enterprise and ferocity. The situation of their town, cut off from intercourse with other places, having little communication with Portugal, and no trade for want of an outlet, enjoyed a delightful climate and fertile soil, and it was for a long time the resort of desperate adventurers, deserters, and fugitives. These formed connexions with Indian women, and their descendants are distinguished even at this day for a large admixture of Indian blood. The Mamelucos, as they were called, were of a wild, erratic disposition, inherited from their mothers; they grew up without restraint of law or religion, and so notorious were they for their ferocity and unruly temperament, that the population of St. Paul's formed a kind of turbulent republic, affecting a certain degree of independence in Brazil, and continually acting as a lawless banditti. They had a language peculiar to themselves, composed of a large proportion of Indian words, mixed with corrupt Portuguese, and it is always spoken of as a distinct and separate dialect. It is to the enterprise and daring of these provincials that Portugal was

indebted for the discovery of gold, and the first colonization of the Minas Geraes.

Rodrigo proceeded on to the province of Espirito Santo, with the gold he had discovered. From thence he pursued his way by Rio de Janeiro back to St. Paul's, having made a complete circuit. He died shortly after, but recommended to his son to follow up his enterprise. From this commencement, multitudes of adventurers proceeded from St. Paul's, but principally from the town of Thaubate; not, as the Portuguese historian says, "em busca de salvagems," to seek for Indians, as before, but for gold in the newly discovered regions. Their success was so great, that the inhabitants of Peratininga followed their example, and the two parties, meeting on the banks of the river where S. José was afterwards built, instead of agreeing in their objects, and pursuing together their operations, set upon each other like famished tigers, impelled by a hunger still more fierce—the *auri sacra fames*. A bloody encounter ensued, in which many were killed on both sides, and the river was from thenceforth called the Rio das Mortes, or the River of Deaths. Other rivers are known by the same name for the same causes, and the bloody squabbles of the inhabi-

tants of these rival cities, wherever they met in search of gold, are commemorated in several parts of the country. The first place where gold was found was at Riberão, a small stream which falls into the Rio das Mortes, and here they built an arayal, or village, called Antonio, near the spot where S. José was afterwards erected.

The vicinity of this river every where attests the extensive search for gold formerly pursued here, as it was for a length of time considered one of the richest parts of Brazil, from the profusion of the precious metal found on its surface. All the banks of the stream are furrowed out in a most extraordinary manner, so as to be altogether unaccountable to one unacquainted with the cause. The whole of the vegetable mould was washed away, and nothing remained but a red earth, cut into square channels, like troughs, with a narrow ridge interposed between them. Above was conducted a head stream of water, let down through these troughs, which were all on an inclined plane. The lighter parts of the clay were washed away, and the gold remained behind. When this has been collected by a process I will hereafter describe, that which remains behind is called pizarão. It is an inert caput mortuum of stubborn sterility, which no

process can afterwards endow with the principle of fertility; so that, in washing out the gold, all the riches of the soil were literally exhausted, and nothing left but a barren and utterly useless surface.

We visited a gentleman in the neighbourhood, whose house stood surrounded with lavras, or gold washings. The former proprietor had extracted from it such abundant stores of wealth, that he expended the sum of eight thousand crusados in building a house in the centre of it. His whole concern, with his splendid mansion, was afterwards sold for one thousand. It was purchased by the gentleman we visited. He wisely abandoned the pursuit of gold, and applied himself to the cultivation of the part the washings had left untouched, and soon converted it into a profitable farm, which yielded him a durable succession of wealth. He planted a large orchard and a garden, in which European fruits and vegetables grow luxuriantly, and around his house were fields of corn, waving a golden harvest of great beauty. His whole chacara displayed the vast superiority of extracting the vegetable, and not the metallic riches of the soil. It stands insulated in an immense tract, rendered sterile by the process of gold washing, and it looks

like a green oāsis in the midst of the red sands of the desert.

The whole of the gold with which the soil is impregnated, is supposed to originate in the metalliferous ridges of rock which intersect the country. Here in its matrix the metal reposes; but the rains falling in impetuous torrents on their summits, and penetrating through their interior recesses, again, ooze from their sides, carrying with them all the lighter particles of the precious metal, as they pass through the veins, and finally deposit them in the soil below, through which they percolate.

As the great auriferous repertory of the country now stood before me, I was curious to explore it, so we prepared to ascend the ridge. The general face of it was quite perpendicular, and we could no more attempt to climb the part opposite to us than Dover cliff; but about three miles to the north-east of the town, the ridge dips, and leaves a depression considerably lower than the rest, which is accessible. This had been rendered passible by a road, carried over it soon after S. José was built, but now so neglected that it is difficult to find. We had to struggle through thickets and underwood at the base of the ridge, and at length stumbled upon what appeared to have been once a grand

road. It was laid down with broad flat stones, forming a kind of escala or stairs, up a very steep inclined plane, so difficult for horses to keep their feet on, that we thought it prudent to alight, and drag them up after us. After winding in a zigzag direction up the rocky face, we at length emerged on the summit, and here we saw in perfection the totally new feature of the Brazilian landscape, which we before had contemplated at a distance. In all our journey from Rio for more than two hundred miles, we had hardly seen a stone peeping through the soil. Here we stood upon an immense ridge of rocks, utterly denuded both of wood and grass, stretching their bare and rugged arms in all directions over the country, and forming a prospect strongly contrasted with any we had yet contemplated. This ridgy region, I was told, ramified through the country to an immense extent in a westerly direction, till it was lost in the Mato Grosso, or vast forests, which extend nearly to the Andes; and these, are the great metallic repositories, from whence the whole subjacent soil of the Minas Geraes is impregnated with gold.

The summit of the ridge was by far the most wild and solitary we had seen in Brazil. It was generally composed of white sand, strewed with

nodules of very bright and almost transparent quartz, from the decomposition of which the sand seemed to be formed. Piled up in great disorder were mounds of mica slate, and large masses of different strata were lying over each other, in an angle considerably inclined, as if they had slipped down in succession from some more elevated place. Towards S. José, the face of the ridge was a perpendicular precipice, five or six hundred feet high, for twelve or fourteen miles; on the other side it descended in a more gradual slope, like a shed from a wall. On descending the slope, the first objec we saw was a rude cross, on a bare rock, t intimate that a murder had been committed a the base of it; and, certainly, no spot coul be more wild and dismal, or better calculate for the purpose. One cause why the road ove this pass was neglected was, that its wild solitude invited banditti, whose favourite haunt it became. Senhor Campos, the worthy sargenté mór, had been attacked on this spot some time before. They stripped and robbed him, and were for some time deliberating whether they should not murder him; but his character, it seems, had some weight even with banditti, and they dismissed him unhurt. A short time before our arrival, a man had been despatched

with letters, which required haste, and he made his way across this ridge, as his shortest road; he too was attacked here, and returned wounded to S. José. We, notwithstanding these premonitory warnings, pursued our way along the edge of a mountain torrent, till we descended with it to the Campos on the other side, from whence we returned, round one end of the serra, a circuitous route of nine or ten miles. The formation of this serra is generally of mica slate, and a modification of clay, talc, and chlorite slate. There is no granite yet discovered here, but a league and a half on the western side are extensive tracts of it. The beta, or vein, is generally quartz, in which is found gold variously mixed with iron stone, magnetic and titaneous iron, ochre, tellurium, and pyrites, containing gold and silver. The serra extends about twelve miles from east to west.

The following qualities are supposed to indicate the existence of metal. Waters impregnated with saline sulphates, particularly if they be warm, and have a mineral taste; marcasites, or pieces of metal found in cavities of rocks, or the beds of rivers, running from them; sterile soil, with scanty vegetation, and of a sickly hue, caused by metallic vapours from within; the

sun-beams strongly reflected from the face of the rock; and mountains loudly reverberating a sound. All these qualities are observable, more or less, in the serra of S. José, particularly the two last. Wherever the sun-beams struck full on the face of the rock in certain positions, they were sent back with an almost dazzling reflection; this, however, might arise from the lustre of the mica slate. But the reverberation of sound was very remarkable. We had every day, almost, a thunder-storm, and the repercussion from the face of the ridge was so loud, sharp, and distinct, that it seemed as if the hard stone was hit and broken by a number of sledges striking upon it; and certainly, if this symptom be any indication of metallic veins, it no where exists so strong as in the serra of S. José.

In this serra it is that the General Mining Association are pursuing the precious metal by shafts, adits, and levels. Tradition has handed down a singular prophecy connected with this mountain, which the present generation at S. José think is about to be fulfilled. The prophecy is, that a day will come when men from the east will cross the seas and arrive at S. José to dig under the serra, where they will discover immense riches. In the

course of their operations, however, they will reach a subterraneous river, which, thus set free, will rush from its bed and overflow the town. The establishment of a company from England to mine in this serra, the people say, is the accomplishment of the first part of the prophecy; the labours of the company, they add, will fulfil the second part; and the old vigario tells them that the third part of the prediction will shortly come to pass, and that the river which is to overflow and ruin S. José, is the taste for luxury and dissipation, which these foreigners have introduced.

For a long time, the only gold in the country was extracted from the clay, through which the rains from this ridge had filtered, leaving behind all the particles of the metal which they carried down. The first mines in the province were pits, called cata, opened by the workmen till they came to the cascalho, or gravel below. This was broken up with pickaxes, and the contents brought to the river and washed. They were therefore opened as near the banks as possible, and were generally called taboleiros, from the flat tabular surface over them. These primitive workings are every where to be seen, and have given names to places, as Catas Altas.

The next improvement was to conduct a stream of water to ground known to be impregnated with the metal, and so wash it out on the spot, and these were called lavras: they are seen in abundance on the banks of the Rio das Mortes.

The third and last was pursuing the metal into the rock itself, and this they attempted by opening superficial trenches, on the most horizontal surfaces, and pushing them on where they found any indication of gold. This they call talho alberto, or the open cut, and several of these remain in the serra towards S. João del Rey, about ten or twelve feet deep, ramifying in different directions, like the ravines of mountain torrents, which they resemble at first sight; but this, however, also failed, as the Brazilians had neither skill nor capital to proceed deeper, from the clumsiness and deficiency of their operations; wheels to turn off the superfluous water were attempted, but so unmanageable that they were afterwards removed, and their place supplied with fifty or sixty negroes. I never saw a wheel in the country, or any means of abridging labour, even a cart or a barrow. Unfortunate slaves carry gravel or rubbish on their heads, in small awkward casks, and climb up steep ascents at great hazard,

where a wheel and bucket, or an inclined plane, might save the greater part of the labour.

About twenty years ago, it was imagined that the gold in Brazil was nearly exhausted, because the rivers and clay ceased to yield it in the same abundance as at first; but it is generally supposed, that what has been found was merely some loose and detached superfluities of the metal, and that the great veins are unopened, which the Brazilians have never yet been able to come at. To invite others of more capabilities to explore these in the heart of the sterile rock, and leave uninjured the prolific soil of the country, and, while the natives were engaged in the pursuits of agriculture, to open the veins of their unproductive mountains to the skill and enterprise of foreigners, who would enhance the local value of every produce of the soil by their consumption, was the best and wisest policy the Brazilians could adopt, in the present state of their country.

The immense quantity of gold derived from Brazil while under the dominion of Portugal, and produced from the very unskilful labours of private owners of mines, scattered over a very wide extent of country, by slaves breaking up and washing the mere surface of the soil with rude implements, gave vast ideas of its

wealth to foreigners, who had been interdicted from interfering in it; but when the country was thrown open, and a quantity of unemployed capital was available in England, and was seeking how to engage itself in mining speculations, it was supposed that such a rich country, worked by the skill and wealth of a company formed in England, would produce the most valuable returns.

The formation of such a mining company, however, was attended with a difficulty in this part of South America which did not exist elsewhere. Although, by the liberal decrees of Dom John VI. strangers were admitted, and sesmarias of land granted, it was supposed that such an innovation, as the interference of a foreign mining company, should not be tried without the separate sanction of the existing Brazilian government. Petitions were, therefore, presented, praying that permission might be given for employing foreign capital, and foreign artisans, in mining speculations in different parts of the country. The object of the petitions was granted, and four decrees were issued by the imperial government, one for Espirito Santo, one for Mato Grosso, and two for the Minas Geraes, allowing persons in whose favour they were promulgated to possess lands

and mines in Brazil, not only during the life-time of the grantees, but during the existence of the companies.* The decrees for Espirito Santo and Mato Grosso were not acted upon by the parties upon whom they were conferred.

One of the decrees for Minas Geraes was in favour of Mr. Edward Oxenford, who afterwards transferred it to the Imperial Brazilian Mining Association, and the other for Mr. I. A. C. Leão, a native and gentleman of rank in the country. Many advantages resulted to a native which a foreigner could not enjoy; he only paid twenty per cent. on all gold raised instead of twenty-five, and his operations might extend to any distance, and be directed to raising any kind of metal, instead of being restricted to two or three mines, and raising gold only. The grant, therefore, of Mr. Leão was purchased by the General Mining Association, who by these means were placed in his stead, and had all the privileges of natives. They thus were unrestricted in carrying on their works through the whole of the rich province of Minas Geraes, a country as large and a soil and climate as fertile and salubrious as those of England.

*. The duration of all foreign mining companies formed for Brazil since that period, has been, by decree dated the 12th of August, 1825, restricted to twenty years.

A board of managing directors was established at Rio, consisting of two native and two English members, and one of the latter, Mr. Duval, proceeded to explore the country granted to them. He set out with a party of men under his orders, accompanied by a skilful miner, from the Hartz mountains, in Germany, and visited the whole of the rich district; and the result of their examination was to establish themselves at S. José in the comarca of Rio das Mortes, supposed to have been the richest part of the province, and of which the natives made the most extraordinary report, confirmed by official documents from the government smelting-houses.

Having ascertained, as far as a superficial examination could go, the reality of those mineral riches yet existing below the surface, a contract was made by Mr. Duval with the owners of mines in the vicinity of S. José, securing to the company the working for thirty years, in a tract of country exceeding three leagues in extent; and paying five per cent. on the gross produce, without binding the company to continue to work the mines longer, than they found it convenient.

Having taken these preparatory precautions, Mr. Duval left Brazil and proceeded to

Germany to engage a necessary number of miners from the Hartz, as they were as skilful as those of England, and might be employed on much more reasonable terms. They arrived in Rio in April, 1828, and proceeded to their destination at S. José, where they immediately began their operations.

It was stipulated that the sum of one hundred contos of reis, or about twenty thousand pounds, should be deposited, as a security for the duty on the gold raised; but by the representation of Mr. Duval, the condition of the decree was revoked, and this deposit was not exacted. Application was also made to have the per centage on the gold raised, reduced from twenty per cent. to five. In October, 1827, a decree passed, exempting the native miners from paying any more; and foreigners have a right to expect the same indulgence, as it is stipulated in the treaty concluded in August, 1827, between England and Brazil, that the subjects of both nations should only pay the same contributions as the natives of the country in which they respectively reside. The result of this reasonable application is not yet known. There are now commenced at each side of the serra four mines, by shafts sunk in the rock, Rezenda, Luzia, Vincente, and

Pacu; but there are fourteen or fifteen more lodes, which are known to be rich, but not yet in operation. At Luzia mine, a large stamping mill has been commenced, and is nearly completed, of jacaranda and other hard woods of the country, and is exceedingly well executed by Brazilian artists.

The gold of these mines is found in a matrix of hard quartz, often visible to the naked eye, but most frequently concealed in its combination with iron pyrites. It is sometimes obtained by the simple process of blasting, pulverizing, and washing; but much remains in the residue left after these operations, and which is extracted by the more scientific process of smelting and amalgamation.

There is now a large quantity of ore raised from the different mines, waiting only for the completion of the stamping mill to extract the gold from it. Washing experiments, made to try the value of this ore, have yielded from 3 to 8½ oz. of gold per cubic foot, weighing about 110 lbs. After the gold had been thus extracted by the washing process, a residue ore is left, consisting of pyrites, which was proved by assays made in London, to contain gold in very considerable proportions. The precious metal, however, being either chemically

combined with the pyrites, or too minutely disseminated, can only be obtained from this residue, by smelting or amalgamation. Specimens sent to the smelting-house of S. João, of some of the gold produced, were said to be very rich, being of 23.3 carats. Indications of silver and copper are also found in these lodes. In the Rezenda mine, the gold is pure and native, without any mixture of pyrites. Tradition relates, that the original proprietor of this mine amassed a considerable fortune by its extraordinary production of gold; and from being originally a man in embarrassed circumstances, he left a considerable property among his descendants, who enjoy it at this day. But while he was pursuing his career, a portion of the serra, near which he was working, gave way, and buried under it a quantity of ore already raised, and the workmen who were raising it. Large fragments of the rock are still to be seen where they rolled down; and until the General Mining Association came, no one had enterprise enough to endeavour to remove them, and get at the riches they are said to cover. The company have here about a dozen German miners, and they employ in their operations above one hundred persons. The whole under the direction of Mr. Milward.

The Brazilians, however, though they have generally abandoned their golden speculations, yet still continue in some places to wash the soil, and we were invited to the conclusion of their workings, and what might be called the harvest home of the golden crop, which conveyed an excellent idea of the manner in which it was formerly collected all over this country. José Esteves de São Francisco, a gentleman who had been a captain in the Brazilian service, owned a large tract of land lying half-way between S. José and S. João. Instead of directing his attention to improve the soil above, he, like his ancestors, preferred searching for gold below. He was the proprietor of about seventy slaves, who were all engaged, more or less, in collecting the precious metal. The process was as follows: for several months they had been cutting down the clay from the sides of a slope on which his property lay. Under the immediate soil they came to the substance called cascalho. This they washed, and reserving the finer parts, rejected the coarser gravel, which lay in large heaps in every part about the fazenda. The soil was susceptible of several washings. He had the year before extracted gold from the upper surface; this year from the stratum below; and the next he

proposed to undertake a stratum still lower. The collection of several months was now thrown together, waiting for the last washing, and we were invited to be present at it.

We went about two o'clock, and were received at his house by his son-in-law, who entertained us with cool cups of sugar dissolved in claret with a little water; and from hence we ascended the side of the hill to the washing. We found a calico tent pitched, open in front, with seats inside; and here, protected from the sun, we sat, and the process commenced. At the bottom of a very long, shallow and sloping trench, with a flat floor and perpendicular sides, were laid green grass sods. On some occasions, English blankets have been used; and on others, hides, with the hair uppermost: but sods were found, from experience, to be the best. The practice of using them, originated in the direction afforded by nature herself. The mines of Potosi were discovered by a Spaniard, who in ascending the mountain, seized a bush to assist him; and this giving way, he found the root embossed with particles of silver. A similar circumstance is told of gold in this province. The first Paulistas pulled up tufts of grass in the same manner, and found numerous particles of gold entangled

in the roots; and the first washings in search of the metal, were from the roots of the herbage at the base of the hills.

At the head of the trench was a large water-course. The former collections from the cascalho were placed here, and the water being turned through it, it dissolved the mass, and carried down the whole of it. The lighter parts were borne away, but the heavier subsided into the grass, which entangled the particles of gold; and so it was in the state in which it was first found in the country—when by a similar process it was washed down from the auriferous serras: the leaves and roots of the grass we saw, were covered with a yellow and black deposit; the first gold dust, the latter esmeril or oxyde of iron, a substance which always accompanies it. Beside the long trench was a pool, in which stood eight or ten negroes, each holding in his hand a round flat dish. These dishes are of three sizes and names. The first a gamella, a very capacious bowl, eight or nine feet in circumference, made from the trunk of a large tree, called for that reason gamelleiro—it is the Brazilian fig.* This bowl was hemispherical. The second was much

* Ficus insipida.

smaller, made of the same tree, and called carumbeia. The third, called batea, of a size between both, formed the shape of a flat cone, the concave surface terminating in a hollow point in the centre. These had all their several uses in collecting the gold.

A quantity of the impregnated sods were raised in the gamella by negro boys, and set down before the men in the pool. They took a portion of them, and laying it in the carumbeia, they dipped it in the water, turning it dexterously from side to side, and separating the leaves and fibres of the grass, which were carried away by the water, with the lighter parts of the clay, and in a short time nothing remained but the gold and esmeril at the bottom, exhibiting clouded shades of black and yellow. When a quantity of this impure mixture was thus collected, it was laid in the batea, and here it was dexterously moved from side to side, in a constant ablution of fresh water, till the esmeril also passed off, and the heavier gold dust remained alone in the point of the cone. The whole of this was finally deposited in a large copper skillet, placed over a fire on the spot, and stirred till all the water evaporated, and nothing remained but dry gold-dust, in general of exceedingly minute particles, but frequently appearing

in small globules, some as large as a grain of small shot. In this state a magnet was passed through it, to which the particles of iron still mixed with the gold adhered; and this was continued till the whole was abstracted.

Sometimes a more scientific process is resorted to. The mixture of dust is put into a bowl, and two ounces of mercury added to two pounds of gold and oxyde. This mass is worked by the hand into a dough, when the mercury takes up the gold only, which is merely entangled, but not amalgamated, with it. It is then put into a cloth, and a portion of the mercury squeezed out; the remainder is set in a brass vessel over a fire, and covered with green leaves, which are removed as they become parched. They exhibit small globules of the sublimed mercury on the surface. What remains in the vessel is pure gold, changed in colour to a dull white.

Gold in Brazil is of various colours, and the places near which it is found, are called by the same names; Ouro Preto, black gold; and Ouro Branco, white gold; the first contains an alloy of silver, which acquires a brown tarnish by oxydation when exposed to the air, and hence called black gold. It is also a peculiarity of the gold of this region, that it is generally attended with iron from iron mica slate. In European

mines, I believe, this substance frequently occurs in quartz, but is never accompanied by gold. In all the gold-washings here, the great concomitant metal is this esmeril or magnetic iron. Through several streams of the country, where gold had been searched for, I found fine strata of this black substance, which I at first took for sand, but learned that it was the iron rejected and left behind, when the gold had been separated.

During the process here, several other extraneous bodies were found, such as grains of shot, slugs of lead, and among the rest, a female's gold ear-ring. It was conjectured, that the person to whom it had belonged was murdered in this solitary place, where, in process of time, the body had dissolved, and the more permanent and enduring substance had alone remained, and was carried down by some current of water.

The quantity collected at this harvest-home, was about four pounds of gold, which, at 4*l.* the ounce, would give 200*l.* sterling. This was apparently a rich, but in reality, a very unprofitable and ruinous mode of farming. The proprietor had seven or eight blacks, daily employed for three hundred days, collecting the cascalho, whom he first bought and then fed,

clothed, and supported, which left in the end but little or no real profit. But by far the most injurious effect, was that produced on his farm. As we passed through it, for several hundred acres, every thing green had disappeared, and left behind a red desert, of the most irksome and barren aspect, on which nothing would hereafter be found to grow in any given period, as no new soil is formed, and the old workings appear as recent as those from which the vegetable mould had been washed but yesterday; and thus, in extracting the gold from his farm, he had extracted along with it every particle of productive riches also.

This factitious sterility was strongly contrasted with the natural richness of the soil, which every where along the confines of the red desert was green, and vegetation flourishing. Where land is of such little value and population so scanty, this is not at present of such consequence; but the time will come, when the increase of people will cause it to be a subject of deep regret, that their ancestors, by any avaricious process, had cursed the ground which God had blessed, and had entailed hopeless barrenness on tracts, which the bounty of Providence had created, with a capability of providing abundance of food. The extent of the

mischief will be apparent, by considering, that there are sixty-six districts in the province where this process is still going on over considerable tracts of land, and generally the most fertile, as they are chosen on the banks of rivers.

Desirous to bring with me some specimens of gold in its pure native state, with the metals associated with it, I proposed to purchase a small portion of the gold dust, before it had undergone the last process of depuration. Captain Esteves sent me a packet made up, containing about one ounce, for which he would not receive the smallest compensation.

The town of S. João d'el Rey, distant about eight miles from S. José, had been also celebrated for the quantity of gold it produced, particularly in a pit, of which tradition handed down the most extraordinary stories; and this I wished to see. There was, moreover, a physician settled there from the United States, and, we were informed, he was dying, and wished for the attendance of a clergyman of the reformed faith; so on the next day we set out for S. João. Our road lay round the end of the serra, and partly along the other side. We passed several small lakes, on the banks of which were heaps of round quartz pebbles, which had been

dragged from the bottom, washed for gold, and then left on the banks; and from the immense quantity of these, we conjectured that the search for and finding of gold were formerly very extensive in this spot. In some places were large stones beside small streams, hollow on the surface; on these a few of the pebbles had been broken, and any grains within taken out; but a considerable quantity yet remained, and, if stamped, would probably yield abundance. In fact, gold-finding seems to have been the great end and occupation of all the people here; so that it is interwoven with the habits and feelings of the very children. We met several pounding these pebbles on the hollow stones, surrounded by young groups, who were watching the process anxiously, to see what the inside of every pebble would produce.

Immediately above the lake, the banks all round were furrowed with lavras, and on some ledges of rocks at a little distance, we perceived an approximation to more difficult and scientific mining; shallow excavations were made in the rock, ramifying in all directions over its surface, and the veins of quartz, forming the matrix of the metal, pursued wherever it had appeared, so that the rock was seamed all over with those trenches eight or nine feet deep, and the nodules of the

matrix strewed about. This was their improved process, called the talho alberto, of which this place affords a perfect specimen. They never penetrated, however, out of the light, and when a vein dipped, it was immediately abandoned, and given up as a thing altogether beyond the reach of human pursuit.

At the time the English companies were formed, the generality of the inhabitants of Rio considered that the speculators were about to bury their capital in an unprofitable and hopeless pursuit, and, what is more extraordinary still, this opinion was entertained by many in the province itself, and in the very neighbourhood of the richest mines. They could not comprehend what could induce the English to come and mine in Brazil. A Brazilian called on my friend, Mr. Duval, shortly after his arrival at Rio, to entreat him to disclose by the aid of what wonderful instrument he would be enabled to discover where the gold lay under the ground without having to dig for it. Was it a glass to see through the soil, or an iron possessing some magic power to indicate the presence of the precious metal? Without some such assistance he was sure the English would not be such fools as to embark in a pursuit, which they on the spot could not render profitable!

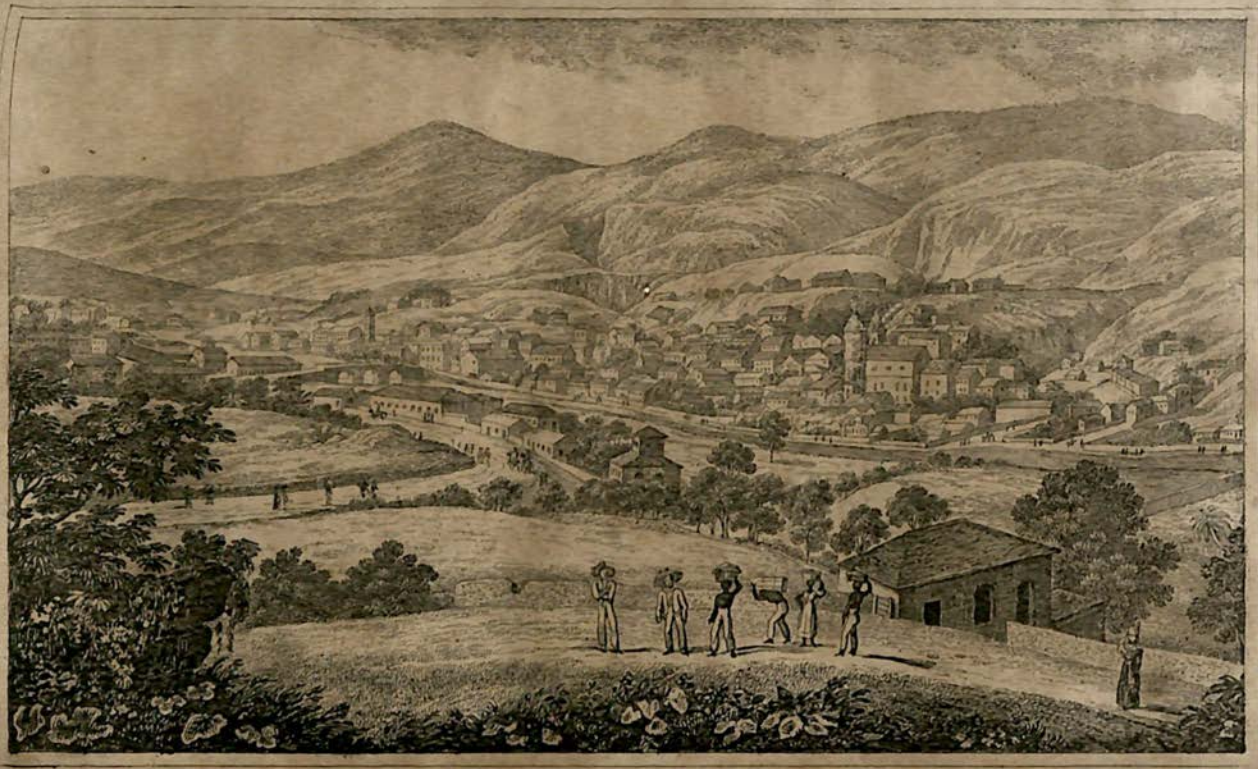
In the province itself the people entertained some such ideas, of the summary and almost magical processes the English were to apply, to bring to light treasures which the Brazilians could not reach. Machines, they thought, would convey a river from a plain to the top of a mountain, and perform other wonders of a like miraculous nature.

We now came to a stratum of sand which dazzled us with the reflection of the sun as we approached. This we found was a bed of rock crystal, of which we collected some fine specimens which lay scattered about; and from this place the Serra do Lenheiro opened upon us, extending like that of S. José, in rude ridges of bare perpendicular rocks, but more scattered and irregular, and in about an hour we arrived at the bridge which crosses the Rio das Mortes. It was a long crazy frame of wood, gravelled on the flooring, and covered over with a roof or shed the whole way. The tolls on it were enormous for this place—a patac for a man and horse. The river was here about sixty yards broad, discoloured with red mud, held in suspension from the pisarão washed into it in gold searching.

About a mile at the other side, we passed through the arrayal or village of Matozinhos. It consisted of a long ornamented church standing

in the middle of a large green, with rows of neat whitewashed houses, running down at each side, forming a very wide street. The dark and rich verdure of the swards between the white edifices, gave the village a very neat and pastoral appearance. This place once contained an extensive gold mine. To intercept the particles of gold brought down by a mountain stream, a mound was run across a ravine; but the architect not calculating the pressure of the accumulated water, after a rainy season, it gave way, and the expensive mound and all the treasures within it disappeared in one night. Beyond this was the Rio Limpo, forming, with its pure stream running over its pebbly bed, a strong contrast to the red mud river we had passed; and having crossed it at a wide and shallow ford, we arrived at S. João d'el Rey.

This celebrated city, the capital of the comarca of Rio das Mortes, was built about the same time as S. José, and was another speculation of the gold-searchers in this country. It was first called after the Rio das Mortes, from the banks of which it is distant about two miles; but in 1712, its name was changed, and John V. conferred upon it his own. It stands at the foot of the Serra do Lenheiro, or woodcutter's hill, who have scarcely left a bush to



G.P. in loc. del.t

on Stone by N. Whittock

VIEW OF THE SERRA AND CITY OF S. JOAO DEL REY.

cover its naked surface; it is divided in two by a branch of the Rio Limpo, which we had crossed. The communication between both parts is carried on by two stone bridges, at each end of the town. It consists of several steep streets, running up the hills at each side, crossed by others more level, as they are parallel to the river. The streets are paved with round flint stones, having generally a flagged raised way at each side. The greater part of the houses are shops, which are neatly kept and well filled with articles of different manufacture, particularly hard-ware and cotton goods from England. Bales of coarse cotton, and coarse felt hats, made in the province, and other articles of the industry of the Minas Geraes, were also piled up, and the whole had the appearance of a thriving and opulent town.

Among the articles for sale, were very large quantities of salt, in bags laid outside the shop doors. The whole is brought from Rio, and we met many more troops of mules laden with this article, than with any other. Though so essential to the health of all animals, the Brazilians had nearly learned to do without it; it was not brought to us, unless we particularly called for it, and then a small quantity was produced on a plate, or in a spoon,

generally wetted, and nearly in a state of solution. European cattle frequently languish and die for the want of it; and so eager are they to taste it, that we always observed them come round the ranchos where bags of salt had been laid, and lick the ground, till it became furrowed like the bone-licks in North America. I remarked that the cattle in the streets of S. João, stopped at the shop doors for the same purpose.

The inhabitants of this town had been calculated at 10,000, but it is not so populous. It contains, by the best information, about 7,000. It is, however, every day increasing. It is so well calculated for communication, that notwithstanding its inland site, the Marquez de Pombal once conceived the idea of making it the capital of Brazil. It has seven churches and two convents, the chapel of one of which is the finest in the province. It has, besides, an excellent hospital, which is spacious, and very clean, and well kept.

The circumstance that once gave great celebrity to it, was the exceeding richness of the Serra do Lenheiro, which overhangs it, in mineral productions; and a mine at the head of, or rather in the town itself, is at this day celebrated. It is nothing more than a deep pit or quarry, at the termination of a ravine,

which runs from the side of the serra. All the currents passing down the ravine are collected in this pit; and several artificial cuts, made at different times, lead thither other streamlets. It is thus, by nature and art, a kind of focus, in which the auriferous waters, running from the serra, centre, and the common reservoir of all the particles of gold, detached from their matrix, and brought down by the torrents. After rain, the inhabitants of the town resorted to this pit, the sand and pebbles were raised and washed, and such quantities of gold extracted from it, as to give to the people of Europe an idea, that it was the real country of El Dorado; but its riches, perhaps, are as imaginary as those of that unascertained being; for they had no means of entirely emptying the pit, as the water continually accumulated there, notwithstanding all their efforts to exhaust it, by some subterraneous communication; and a deep pool yet remains in the centre, which has never been explored, and which fancy has filled with exhaustless treasures.

When I climbed up the town, to visit this celebrated reservoir, the water was condensed into a muddy pool, at the bottom of the quarry, fifty or sixty yards in circumference, and ten or twelve yards below the lower edge. Arti-

ficial steps had been made in the higher parts, to facilitate the descent into sundry cavities, and little reservoirs. Above, the face of the rock was a whitish sand-stone, mixed with pyrites, and the sides descended, in many places, steep and perpendicular. Several parties of the citizens, and their families, were reclining on the ledges of the rocks about, and seemed looking down over the edge, into the pit below, and contemplating, with wistful eyes, the treasures shut up in the deep bottom of the muddy and inaccessible reservoir. This quarry of gold had been purchased from the proprietors, I was informed, some years before, by an English speculator, for 300*l.*, who intended to draw off the water into the bed of the river below, and possess himself of treasures, which the Brazilians had not skill to come at, if such are to be found.

The above account of this mine I heard from some of the inhabitants, but hearsay tradition is always uncertain, and no where more than in this country, particularly as to facts connected with mining. There is something in the search of gold, which, while it debases the mind, exalts the imagination, and the most extravagant and visionary tales are caught at and credited.

We now paid a visit to Dr. Byrde, the gentleman who was sick, and we were glad to find him wonderfully recovered from an indisposition he had supposed would have been mortal. The idea of dying in a remote place, among strangers to his language and his religious belief, and among whom, he apprehended, he would not be allowed the rites of christian burial in consecrated ground, had preyed on his spirits. He was, however, now so recovered, that instead of his talking of his funeral, he hospitably entertained us at dinner, and we took leave of him in good spirits.

The ouvidor, or presiding judge of S. João, and the district of Rio das Mortes, was a gentleman of the name of Aureliano de Sousa, to whom I had letters of introduction from friends in Rio, and I paid another visit to S. João to see him. He lived in the government house, on a fine elevation, at the entrance to the town. It is large and striking in its exterior, but being a government concern, it was neglected and out of repair. The ouvidor was a very good looking young man, robust, with dark hair and eyes, with a handsome intelligent face, and altogether a good specimen of a Brazilian country gentleman. He had studied at the University of Coimbra, and his

acquirements were respectable. He read and spoke English, but preferred French, as the language of our conversation. I was accompanied by my friend, Mr. Milward, and he received us very cordially, and with pleasure and promptitude informed us on every subject we inquired about.

In every comarca of the province of the Minas Geraes, there is a caza de fundação, a registry and smelting-house, with fifteen officers attached; to which all the gold raised must be sent, assayed, and the duty paid, before it can be transmitted out of the province. That for the comarca of Rio das Mortes was established in S. João, and within the precincts of the government residence, and I wished to see it; so he at once ordered the keys, and came with us. We first entered a large apartment, in which was a raised table, with forms round it, and a kind of elevated throne at the end of the table, with scales before it. Here, all the gold-dust found in the comarca is weighed, and the escrivão, or secretary, lays by a fifth part for the emperor. Out of the end wall was a gigantic arm, with an immense scale suspended from it. This, we supposed, was also for weighing gold, and we had an high idea of the vast quantity. We found, however,

it was for the copper coins which are sent here, in payment of contributions, and transmitted to the treasury at Rio.

We then passed into the smelting-house. Here were two furnaces, with their proper crucibles. A quantity of dust and grains is put in, with a proportion of muriate of mercury, of which a large bowl stood by, and we were warned not to touch it. When the metal is fused with the flux, it is run into iron troughs, of various sizes, forming ingots, from ten oitaves, to an arroba, or thirty-two pounds. The fuel used is charcoal, and they are very particular in selecting the wood. That which is hardest is best, in the following order — jacaranda, eruera, bruena, and candeia. All the charcoal used in smelting is carefully laid by in a covered receptacle, under each furnace, to be burnt again, to extract any particles of the precious metal it might have imbibed. The more impure the gold, the more refractory it is, and requires a greater proportion of flux of muriate of mercury. Very pure gold runs in three hours. Some iron-stone, found near the town, and tried here, yielded ninety per cent. Specimens of arsenic and magnesia were also sent from the neighbourhood.

The next room was that of the ensayador, or

assayer, who determines the weight and fineness of each bar. Gold, from well-known mines, is tried merely by the touch-stone; for which purpose a large one, with a convex back, like a pincushion, is kept, and it was marked with various shades. These marks are produced by little bars of gold, united to copper pins with bevil points. Each pin is impressed with the number of carats of the gold on its point, from 16 up to 24. Some of the gold found in the comarca was so fine as 23.3. and 23.4, which last was from a specimen from the mine of Pacu at S. José. Finally the bar is stamped with an impression forming the crown of Brazil, the fineness of the gold, the weight, and other particulars. It is then handed to the proprietor, who may, after this, negotiate it and send it where he pleases. All gold must pass through this process. A proprietor may keep it at home as long as he finds it convenient, but if he attempts to take or send it out of the province, it is liable to seizure and forfeiture,

The duty paid by natives, was formerly twenty per cent., but by the exertions of the deputy Vasconcellos, it was reduced to five. Wishing to ascertain the quantity entered for the last year, the ouvidor, who did not seem to make a mystery or concealment of any thing,

had the registry brought, and we found one hundred and thirty entries had been made of gold from different proprietors. The quantity of each raised was from one up to thirteen marcos of eight ounces each, which taking the average of five, would give 5,200 ounces of gold found in the Comarca of Rio das Mortes in the year 1828, and this, at 4*l.* per ounce, would amount to 20,800*l.* worth of gold, sent to be smelted and assayed, besides a considerably larger quantity, perhaps, smuggled or not brought in.

After this inspection, we proceeded to the library lately established in the town. This is kept in an apartment in the camera, or town-hall, and is open from nine to one. The librarian is a mulatto padre, a very extraordinary man in his appearance; low, fat, with a large cocked hat, and his singular face buried in his breast. Besides being librarian, he is editor of the Astro de Minas, a newspaper established about a year ago at S. João. As it is a very spirited and rather a violent constitutional paper, it is always committed with the Analista and other ministerial journals. In one of the Analistas I saw at Rio, was a curious description of an extraordinary animal found at S. João, of the tatu or armadillo species, and the

padre was depicted both morally and physically under the shape of an armadillo, with much humour and spirit. I was curious to see the original, and I thought the portrait an excellent likeness, for really the librarian in every respect resembled a " hog in armour." He is, however, a man of talent, and retorted on his adversary with great effect. He spoke a little French, and very obligingly communicated all he knew.

The books of this infant establishment in the mountains of Brazil, where, till lately, all kinds of knowledge was inhibited, consisted of about 1000 volumes, ranged round a neat apartment, having a reading table in the centre. Besides Portuguese and Spanish, there was a large proportion of French; the Encyclopédie, Voltaire's, Rousseau's, and Raynel's works, with many which appeared in the early part of the French Revolution. But we were surprised to find in so remote a place a number of English books. Among them were the Revolutionary Plutarch; Smith's Wealth of Nations; Pinkerton's Geography; Paradise Lost; Sentimental Journey; Trials for Adultery, with some of the periodicals; and among the newspapers, we saw the Times and the Chronicle. We found there were three persons in the town, and members of the library, who spoke English, and more who

could read it, and were making a progress in the language. Besides these, all the journals published in Brazil are received and filed in the reading-room.

This library is but an appendage to a polytechnic society, which they wish to establish here, and our friend the ouvidor, who was its founder, drew up a plan which has two objects; to form a gymnasio literario, where knowledge may be elicited by investigation and debate, and the conflict of mutual light and intelligence; and a gabineto d'estudos, to extract from various literary publications of different nations, such information as would be new in Brazil, reduce it to a portable size, and so publish periodically all the various lights and discoveries of Europe in the language of the country, for the instruction of the people. This prospectus was sent for the information and approbation of government, but no answer was returned; and it was generally apprehended that both the society and the library would be discouraged.

Its members comprise persons of consequence and intelligence in the neighbourhood, and among them a fine spirited young man, Batista Cāetano, whom we met on the road, who brought the first printing-press ever seen in the Minas to S. João, and established the Astro de Minas.

We returned to dine with the ouvidor, who entertained us in a very kind and unaffected manner. The menage of a Brazilian gentleman, however, is not laid out to entertain strangers, and its appointments are not very elegant. From the contrast they see in European entertainment, they are pained at their own deficiency. But though the chief magistrate's table was not splendid, it was plentiful; and the affectionate cordiality of his manner was quite delightful. We had no salt at table, and he was rather surprised when we asked for it; but he had excellent pão de trigo, or wheaten bread. Wheat is now grown in considerable quantities in the comarca, at a few leagues distance. Every thing was good and comfortable; but he more than once apologized, by saying he was a single man; and after dwelling on the comfortless state of such a life, he said with great naïveté, "Well, indeed, I can live so no longer, and so I am going to take a wife;" and in fact he was betrothed to a young lady just twelve years old, and was to be married in a short time. As he was just elected a member of the chamber of deputies, he said he wished he could visit England to take a lesson from our house of commons, how he should conduct himself in his own. He

acknowledged, with unaffected diffidence, his great deficiency; and he requested me to write to him, and inform him on every subject which might strike me, as connected with the knowledge or improvement of the country. After coffee, we departed from our kind host, with sincere feelings of good-will on all sides.

This gentleman was a good specimen of his class in Brazil; simple, independent, and hospitable, knowing the defects of his country, and anxious to gain information and knowledge which could be useful; and for that reason, a friend to strangers who might impart them. On my return to Rio, I availed myself of an opportunity of sending some English books for his library at S. João, and accompanied them with a letter, containing some free remarks on the state of the country. He took them in such good part, that he translated the letter himself into Portuguese, and sent it to the Astro de Minas, through which it was circulated all over Brazil.

This town is considered, next to St. Paul's, the most spirited and liberal in Brazil. The inhabitants are, generally speaking, the most intelligent. They entered with enthusiasm into the different measures successively adopted for the independence of the country; and

they are now sincere and firm supporters of the constitutional system, against the opposite extremes of anarchy and despotic power. They complain, however, bitterly, of an act which has affected the happiness and welfare of almost every family in the neighbourhood, and that of S. José.

It is a usual practice in Brazil, for young men to assemble, armed, on festival days; particularly on that of Corpus Christi, which is held the highest in the calendar. In June, 1826, about eighty persons paraded for the purpose, with their officers, on the green of S. José: and after the ceremony and procession, they were marched to the camera, where their arms were deposited, and they were dismissed. But instead of being suffered to return home, they were surrounded by a troop of cavalry; every man was seized, and they were given to understand that they were enrolled as soldiers. Some were refractory, but they were treated with great severity, and put in irons as mutineers. Others requested permission to return home, even in company with their guard, to apprise their friends and arrange their affairs. But even this was not permitted; they were all marched out of town, and sent off to the armies. This, I am told, was practised simultaneously

in most of the towns of the Minas Geraes. The whole of the young men who attended the festivals were seized, and sent out of the province, to which they never returned.

On the next year, the muster at S. José was very scanty — not more than half the usual number attended; but those who did were treated in the same manner—all arrested and sent off, and were never seen again. Among them were several cases of great distress. One was that of a widow who had five sons living with her in considerable comfort: three of them were seized on the first occasion, and the remaining two on the last. The poor woman earnestly requested the officer to permit one, at least, to stay at home to protect her and provide for her support, but he was inexorable. In her distress she immediately applied to Senhor Campos, the sargenté môr of S. José, who is a kind of refuge to all the afflicted in that district. He lost no time in demanding the restoration of one of the widow's sons; but the officer still refused to liberate him. He therefore drew up a strong representation of the transaction, which he was about to send off to the emperor himself; and the officer, alarmed at the exposure of so much oppression, liberated the young man—all the rest perished.

In the year 1828, five or six months before my visit, they attempted again to practise this outrage on the few young men that remained, and entirely drain the country—but they were grown wiser; the whole corps who assembled at the last festival of Corpus Christi, at S. José, was a lieutenant and a corporal.

The pretext for these extraordinary and most oppressive acts, was the necessities of the army; to supply men for which, it was found indispensable to resort to this mode of conscription. If so, it is only another proof of the baneful effects of the miserable warfare, in which the country was engaged with its neighbours. But the people of the Minas Geraes assign for it an ulterior cause, and affirm that it was intended to depopulate a province, whose free and independent spirit it is thought advisable to subdue. Whatever was its cause, its effects are most deplorable. Though the war had ceased, not one of the young men had returned to S. José. Almost the whole of the rising white population has been torn away from the province; and either on the roads, or in the towns, we scarcely met a young man who was not a black or a mulatto slave.

The abstraction of its people in this way,

from any country, would be a serious and deplorable calamity; but in Brazil, where every white man is invaluable either as a free agriculturalist, or as a counterpoise to the fearful ascendency of the black population, the evil is almost irreparable, and the oppression of the act only equalled by its folly.

As it was Christmas, and festival time, my host thought it right to invite the respectable gentlemen of the vicinity; and in this way keep up that feeling of harmony and good-will, which it is most desirable to establish between strangers and natives. The people of the Minas are well disposed to this; they readily and with pleasure accept invitations, but they do not return them, not from a mean or parsimonious spirit; but here, as in other parts of the country, their domestic establishments are so ill provided, that they are reluctant to expose them to strangers. On this day, were invited a number of gentlemen who had all some military rank, from colonel down to sargenté môr, as belonging to some corps. There are three in the district: the cavalry, into which blacks are never admitted, the regular infantry, and the ordenança, a kind of gendarmes, principally employed in arresting fugitive slaves. The capitão môr and sargenté môr are the chief

officers of this corps. The company were men of very simple manners, plain, unaffected and good-natured, and entirely unacquainted with the usages of other places.

Among the dishes at table was roast mutton. The extraordinary prejudice against this meat exists as strongly in this district as elsewhere. Sheep were to be found here, but they made no other use of them than shearing them; and they turned away from their flesh with the same repugnance, that Europeans would feel if dogs, cats, or any other unclean animals were set before them. This prejudice Mr. Duval endeavoured to remove on the first arrival of the English. He procured some sheep, fattened them well, invited the people to dine with him, and placed before them mutton cooked after the English fashion; he induced them with some difficulty to taste it, and admit that it was not altogether unpalatable food. On this occasion, however, I did not see that any of them eat it, though it was something gained over their repugnance, that they could sit at table with it and help others to it. The extraordinary use made of it on the shores of the Rio de la Plata, I heard here also.

Some of the party had never seen or tasted champagne before, and when it was sent about

they called it cerveja, beer, and actually drank it as such, till convinced that it was something else, by its effects on them. With cider they were equally unacquainted, but they were not equally partial to it. We gave as a toast, "Prosperity to S. José," and they all stood up with animation and cried out "Viva, viva!" They also drank with great good-will, "A close and cordial amity between England and Brazil."

Among the company was a tenente colonel, João Nepomusceno, who, though still in middle life, had all the appearance of a man in a state of premature decay: his countenance sallow and emaciated, his hair in scanty patches, and his limbs trembling and infirm. It was evident some extraordinary cause had occasioned this; I inquired what it was, and I was informed. He had a female slave, who for some real or supposed injury, or in the hope of obtaining her freedom at his death, determined to destroy him and his family, which consisted of a wife and child. To this end she procured from her husband the root of a plant producing a poison, known only to the people of her nation; she administered it first to the domestic animals, to try its efficacy, and when it produced on them its deadly effects, she gave it to the rest of the family. His child died in a few hours, and he

himself scarcely survived, but still bears about him the deleterious effects of the dose. The woman who perpetrated this, was executed, you suppose, and her punishment accompanied with all the execration such an act naturally excited. No such thing. A slave in Brazil is not always amenable to the laws; as far as relates to him, they neither protect nor punish. He is only a species of property, and the rights of the owner are paramount to those of justice. Her master sold her to another, who did not hesitate to buy her, and with the money raised by her sale, he was enabled to purchase the fazenda I described to you. The diseased appearance of this desolate man, whose family had been swept away in a few hours, and the knowledge that the perpetrator was only transferred to another house and suffered to live to execute again the same atrocity, is one of those fearful evils which could not take place except where slavery exists; and the selfish feeling that our fellow-creature is part of our property, obliterates the sense of his moral responsibility.

Another of the company was a gentleman, whose family exhibited a trait of a very different kind. He was the commander of the corps of young men, who had been kidnapped at the festival of Corpus Christi. He now lives with a

family of grandchildren, exceedingly pretty and interesting little creatures. Their mother, his daughter, was married to a young man, who held a situation under government at Rio. He was an excellent person, and she was passionately attached to him, and had a young family of five children. He took ill and died; his wife, who at the time was but twenty-one, attended him with the most assiduous and sleepless duty while he lived, and on his death declared that she felt she could not survive him. She recommended her children, to whom she was also the tenderest mother, to her parent's care; she then lay down, and though in the prime of life and vigour of health, she rapidly sunk under the feeling of uncontrollable affection, and died of a broken heart about a week after her husband. Such traits are honourable to the sensibilities of the Brazilians; and certainly I never met a people, among whom the ties of kindred duties and affections seem stronger, or exercised in a more exemplary manner.

The women of the country are remarkably prolific. They marry at the early age of twelve or thirteen, and continue to have children to a late period. Marriages, also, take place between persons of very different ages, and the disparity is not considered singular. Men of

sixty frequently marry girls of twelve, and have a family about them, where the wife seems the daughter and the little ones the grandchildren. When both the parties marry young, their families increase to an incredible number. A Jeronimo Comargos, living near S. José, aged forty-eight, and his wife, aged thirty-eight, had thirteen sons in succession, and then six daughters, all living; three of them are married, and they have already five grandchildren also. Anna, the wife of Antonio Dutra, had four children at one birth, who were all baptized together, and lived. Instances of similar fecundity are every where seen in the town and neighbourhood.

I have pointed out, also, several distinguished for extraordinary births, and a super-fetation hardly known, I believe, in other countries. Maria Ilene, the wife of Antonio José d'Andrada, was confined after the usual time, and had a daughter, but she still continued pregnant, and in two months after was delivered of another, who both lived. But the most singular circumstance, and which I could hardly have believed, was it not communicated to me by the sargenté môr, as a thing which he knew to be fact, was the following very extraordinary conception. A creole woman,

with whom he was acquainted in the neighbourhood, had three children at a birth, of three different colours, white, brown, and black, with all the features of their respective classes. Such a thing, I believe, is generally supposed to be impossible in Europe; but in South America, it is only one of the extraordinary instances of the almost preternatural fecundity, both of the animal and vegetable kingdom.

Having passed the Christmas holidays among my kind and cordial friends, and performed, as far as they were required, all the professional duties of the season, for the little remnant of the reformed church scattered here in the wilderness, I proceeded farther into the country to visit the topaz mines, and the famous city of Villa Rica; or, as it is now named, the Cidade Imperiale do Ouro Preto. I was accompanied by a young friend, the brother of Mr. Milward. We took Patricio as our guide, and set out on the 30th of December. Our direct road lay across the pass of the serra, which we had ascended some days before; but there runs parallel to its base, at some distance on the other side, the river Carahandahy, which was so swollen with the continued rains, as to be now impassable; and there was no bridge across it:

This was another proof of the careless improvidence of the people of the country. They had not left a tree standing within any accessible distance; and in this land of forests, they could procure wood enough to make a bridge across a narrow river. This prodigal waste of timber, in some parts of the country, has been a subject of complaint and regret by all the enlightened and patriotic men. It was melancholy to see, that when woods had been cleared away, they had not left a stick standing for several miles.

Whilst this evil is so seriously felt and acknowledged, it is not a little surprising that no precautionary measures are taken to repair the damage already committed, and no prohibitory means enforced to prevent a recurrence of it. An absurd practice prevails among the lower orders, of setting fire at the end of August, to the grass, bushes, and underwood, under pretence of thus destroying the myriads of carapatoos which infest both men and cattle. The effect of these fires, is not only to check and destroy again, every year, the rising forests, but also too frequently to communicate to, and lay waste, extensive tracts of old wood, which are seen blazing for days together. No punishment is, however, awarded; and no provision is made

to extinguish, if possible, this insane and injurious practice.*

Our way was along the base of the ridge, till we turned the extremity of it, and so by the head of the river which we could not cross. The weather had been for a few days dry, and we had hopes that it would accompany us. The morning when we set out was beautiful and temperate, and we enjoyed it for some time, till we arrived near the extremity of the ridge, which was terminated by a conical mountain. Here we saw a dark cap gathering on the point of the cone; and some indistinct distant muttering gave us warning of what was to follow. Patricio said, "chuve," and urged us to hasten past the mountain, close under which our road lay: but the moment we arrived there, as if the cloud had reserved itself till then, it burst upon us, and discharged such a deluge of fire and water as was very awful.

* In an eloquent appeal by J.B. Andrada, is the following passage:— "Our forests, so rich in all kinds of timber, would not then be destroyed as they are now, by the axe of the negro, or reduced to ashes by the hand of ignorance. The verdant summits of our mountains, those perennial sources of humidity and fertility to the lowlands, would not then be laid bare and scorched by the burning heats of our climate, and our forests would be preserved, which, by their foliage, size, and ponderosity, give a peculiar character to our beautiful country."

I had always before been rather gratified by the sensations which thunder and lightning imparted, any vague apprehensions of danger being lost in the stronger feelings of awe and sublimity; but this was really so horrible, that I could no more enjoy it than if I had stood under the exposure of a battery of loaded cannon—and the impression is hardly yet worn off. It became quite dark in mid-day sunshine, except when some lurid blaze enveloped us, which was accompanied by a sheet of water, which fell on us like a cataract, and almost beat us to the ground. The explosion of sound immediately followed the flash; it came with a tremendous rattling noise, not like distant thunder, but as if the rocks above us were rent by some force, and tumbling upon us. If I could have divested myself of the alarm which the immediate proximity of such awful danger excited, I should have been delighted to contemplate the chemistry of nature, on her grand scale. I remember with what pleasure I had seen Sir Humphrey Davy produce water from the combustion of hydrogen and oxygen. Here it was generated from the same cause in an instant, and in cataracts; and I was standing in the midst of the combustion, and admitted, as it were, into the very interior of nature's great

laboratory. The lightning in this part of the country is often fatal; and we had next day an opportunity of seeing a commemoration of its effects.

With great difficulty we made our way through this ordeal of fire and water, which was sometimes accompanied by violent gusts of wind, which we could not stem; and at length emerged upon a broad campos, similar to that we had passed before our arrival at S. José. The first impression was very favourable: large herds of black cattle, attended by herdsmen, covered the lawns, and were eating the herbage which nature, with a bountiful hand, had spread as the future support of tens of thousands more. The men were amusing themselves with discharging sky-rockets; but we could not learn why. The practice, so common in towns, was rather unusual, we thought, in so remote a place, and among such a people. We afterwards found that these cattle were merely herds of passage to Rio, from the remote interior; and the herdsmen were here celebrating the eve of the Epiphany, by fireworks, as they do before the churches in Rio, as a preparation for every festival.

In one of the romantic glens we passed, the feitor of a fazenda had built a residence, and

nothing could be conceived more beautiful and picturesque than the scenery. A stream, as clear as crystal, tumbled down the rocks in cascades, just behind the house; slopes of flowering shrubs, in full and fragrant blossom, rose all about; and above, large forest trees spread their branching arms. In the bosom of this lovely scene he had built his house, and it was in size and structure a good one; but nothing could be conceived more dismal, dirty, and dreary than its appearance. We naturally imagined that the man who had judgment to select such a spot, would have taste to adorn it. We fancied an English villa, with all its elegant accessories, and we agreed that nothing would have been more beautiful; yet thousands of such spots lay every where about us, and the only inhabitant was a man, who seemed a fit inmate for a pig-sty.

Beyond this the campos exhibited an extraordinary appearance. It was rifted and rent into a number of deep chasms, which divided the soil sometimes for a considerable length, and some of them were very suddenly formed. We pursued our road till we abruptly came to the edge of a very deep one, which seemed to have been recently opened, by the sudden falling in of the field over which we were passing; it had

only just intercepted the way, and we were obliged to ride round the extremity of it, at its upper end, as the lower stretched to an almost interminable extent. The appearance of the interior of these chasms was quite rich and beautiful. They consisted of a bright red earth, varied with vivid hues of scarlet, violet, and other irridescent colours, passing into each other like those in the arch of a rainbow; some were intersected with sharp rugged ridges below, miniature representatives of the great ones that intersected the country, exhibiting with their fantastic shapes and vivid hues, an appearance as singular as it was beautiful. Some were of vast depth and extent—some were visible at their termination, and you saw where they began and ended—some opened into deeper glens, where they were lost. We were at first utterly at a loss to account for the rending asunder of the ground, which caused these fissures; they seemed like the effects of earthquakes, and the process was every where still going on; but on closer examination, we saw that through the bottom of each ran a small stream, which entirely washed away the mould, and left a vacuity, which the earth above fell in to supply. Many leagues, therefore, of these places seem undermined with subterranean currents, which,

in process of time, may convert this verdant surface into a succession of impassable red ravines.

We at length came to the very extensive fazenda of Joaquim de Miranda, a large white house, standing in a lawn, which had the appearance of an English demense, and was the only human habitation we had seen for ten miles; and at six we arrived at the arrayal of Lagoa Dourado, drenched with rain. We brought no mule or any luggage, but a water-proof bag, containing a change of clothes, which Patricio carried on his head; on opening it every thing was dry, so we made ourselves comfortable.

The arrayal of Lagoa consists of about fifty houses, being a long street down a hill, with three churches. This was a large proportion of religious edifices for such a place, but the people seemed very pious, for before the doors stood an immense number of crosses, and it appeared to us, as if every person in the town had erected one.

In the estalagem of this village, we found both quarto and cama, which latter consisted of a canvass bag stuffed with the glumes of milho, which caused a loud rustling, disturbing the person who slept on it, and every one in the room, on the smallest motion; but it had a

still more disagreeable quality. In the next room was a merry party, who, after we were in bed, began to sing very harmonious duets; and I fell into a pleasing slumber, with the sounds of sweet music floating about me. I soon, however, awoke in great pain, with violent spasms in my feet and hands, the cause of which I could not at all account for; at length I recollected that, when sleeping on a similar bed before at Ilhéos, I was attacked in the same way, and awoke labouring under the same distressing feeling. I therefore removed my rustling matrass, the spasms went off, and I slept from that hour till morning. It has been said that these beds cause spasms, and as far as my experience goes, it strengthens the opinion.

Our way next morning lay along the edge of one of the most extensive and richest lavras in the country, and from which the place derived its name of *dourado*, or golden. Immediately outside the village, is a very large and deep ravine, extending to a considerable distance, and exposing its bowels stained with bright red ochre. This is excavated in soft sand-stone, of the consistence of hard clay, and is strongly impregnated with gold, which accumulates in caldeiros or pits like caldrons. Large masses of gold are sometimes found in these caldeiros. They are indi-

cated by fibres ramifying through the matrix in which they lie, and when pursued from different directions, they terminate in a common nucleus. A lump was found about thirty years ago in this place, which weighed forty pounds. The want of a current of water renders it less valuable, but they have conducted a considerable stream along the summit of the pits; we saw a number of negroes, covered with red cloaks and caps, engaged in the works, and their odd costume caused them to form a singular spectacle.

The reputation of the riches of these caldeiros, had nearly caused the death of the proprietor. Application was made to him to sell the mine, but he constantly refused. He was threatened by anonymous communications, but he disregarded them; and at length he was attacked by assassins, who left him apparently dead. He was brought to S. João d'el Rey, and was attended by Dr. Byrde, who told me the circumstance. He never ventured to return to Lagoa, but disposed of the mine. The assassin was well known; he at first fled, but has since returned and is now living at his ease in the village.

Our way lay through campos similar to those of yesterday, and on an elevated plain we observed

a very large cross. Its unusual size attracted my notice, and I rode up to view it. It appeared, by an inscription, that a Senhor Antonio, of Lagoa, the village we had left, was travelling over this plain in 1811, when he was overtaken by such a thunder-storm as we encountered yesterday, and was struck dead; and his friends erected this cross on the spot where his scorched body was found, in commemoration of the circumstance. It is said that lightning in Brazil is innocuous, but the people here know it is otherwise, and frequent crosses to mark its effects are melancholy proofs of it.

In all ages the effects of lightning have been distinguished by some mark; and among the Romans, the removal of the *triste bidental* set upon the spot, was considered an act of great impiety. The same impression continues among people down to the present day; but on the introduction of Christianity, the cross was substituted in place of other emblems; and in Catholic countries, it every where distinguishes the sacred spot, marked by the celestial visitation. In some places it was set up in a small cavity, evidently made by the impression of the electric fluid on the ground; and so it was a substitute for the *puteal*, erected on similar spots by the Romans. It is also a proof that a cross

does not always indicate a murder in Catholic countries, as some assert, but that it is only one of the many causes for its erection; and I presume Lord Byron was in error, when he said the crosses on the crags were not "devotion's offering," but the "memorials foul of murderous wrath."

Beyond this, we came to extensive horse-pastures, where a number of mares and foals were grazing. They were the first instances we had seen of any extensive portion of these campos applied to pasturage, and from the high condition in which the cattle appeared, it seemed as if the place was very favourable for that purpose. About mid-day, we arrived at a place with the odd name of Olho d'Agoa, or eye of water. These words, in Portuguese, mean a source or spring, and there is a spring of very pure water near it. The rancho was a miserable place, on the summit of a hill, though it was between two picturesque objects, one a fine church, and the other, a magnificent figueiro, or Brazilian fig-tree, which had escaped the general devastation of timber, and stood a noble ornament on a bare hill. We could get no milho for our horses, till Patricio went to the house of the vigario, at the bottom of the hill, and purchased some. The clergyman of

the parish here, as in other places, was the chief farmer who supplied people with necessaries.

From hence we saw the serra of Capa Boa, extending from east to west, and forming another of those great barriers, which rise out of the extensive campos, like vast walls, dividing them into great enclosures; and, in a short time, we arrived at the fazenda de Medonza, the out-offices of which were so extensive, as to resemble a village. The houses were embosomed in trees, and the sloping sides of the hills around, were covered with plantations of the milho and cana, of the richest verdure. Winding through it was a clear river, over a pebbled bed, and the aspect of the whole was peculiarly pleasing. It was one of those delightful views, which, in Brazil, bursts on the eye of the traveller, and relieves it from the general uniformity of the solitude around him.

This part of the Minas seems but little frequented. We did not meet, in two days' journey, a single tropero, or even fazenda, with two solitary exceptions. Instead of these pleasing indications of intercourse and civilization, the campos was every where bristling with crosses, set up in all directions, which

seemed as numerous as those I had met in Wallachia. We found here, also, that they were not set up to indicate murder. Some of them were land-marks, erected by different proprietors, to distinguish their boundaries; this sign being used by the pious Brazilians as the best emblem they could employ on any occasion. One indicated a sudden, but natural death: a mulatto in climbing up the hill with a load, burst a blood-vessel, and died on the spot which the cross marked. One, only, indicated a murder and robbery: a man had left the village of Lagoa, with some of the produce of the mines in his pocket, and he was followed by another, who knew the circumstance; and when he overtook him, he stabbed and robbed him. This was the only instance we had yet met with, of a cross indicating murder and robbery; and even this was caused by the parent of every crime in the country—gold.

In the evening, we arrived at the arrayal of Sua Suci. This is a long and straggling village, on a hill, of about forty houses, very squalid and dirty. It has, however, two white churches, which mark it at a considerable distance. We stopped at a kind of estalagem, kept by an old gentleman, called the major, with a long grey beard, and so very polite, that

he never left us a moment alone. He was full of traditionary anecdotes of the Paulistas, and their first discovery of the country, events with which he seemed himself almost coeval. He told us the name Sua Suci implied, in their provincial tongue, the "long journey, and the short journey," and originated in the following cause: — The rival adventurers from Thaubate and Peratininga wished to end disputes by making certain boundaries; and for this purpose, two parties set out from opposite directions, agreeing, that where they met, was to be their mutual limits for the future. One was obliged to take a long circuit, and the other came by a direct road; but they fell in with each other at this place, and thus it was named. This is a modification of Sallust's story of the *aræ Philænorum*, though I could not find that the old major had any classical knowledge. We were informed by others, that the sua-suci, or sussuy, was the name of a large bird once found in this district, but of which the race has now become extinct.

The place seems to have been of more consequence formerly than at present. The estalagem had no less than four camas, a greater number than we had yet seen in any one place; these were made of coiras, stretched very tight on a frame,

and were not only as elastic, but as sonorous as a drum. Our hostess was a very large portly dame, with a huge papos, or tumour in her throat. Her communicative husband, who saw me eyeing it, said to me aside, "não come sal," that it arose from her "not eating salt" with her food, a cause I had heard elsewhere assigned for it. The old major was one of the many remarkable examples of the salubrity of the country, having preserved his health and vigour to an extreme old age. He was past ninety, and he had a family of young children about him, the eldest of whom was not ten years old.

The lightning and thunder was incessant all night, accompanied with torrents of rain; and we were in hopes that, having now fully discharged themselves, we should be exempt from them for the day. Before we departed, an old negress, who attended us, came to me, and looking about with great caution, to see if any one observed her, she put her finger and thumb together in the form of a circle. Not comprehending her mystic sign, she looked about again, and then put her finger in her mouth, and began to chew it. I now understood that she wanted some money for tobacco, so I gave her a cobre, which she took with delight, and carefully concealed it in her girdle. It is not the usage here

to give money to attendants, who are always slaves, and use it, it is said, only in buying caxas, which their masters strongly discourage; yet I know no class who better deserve it, or on whom such little donations would be better bestowed. Many of them, I am informed, would lay it up as a store, to purchase their freedom; and a small part of the sums wasted on insolent English waiters, would be an important acquisition to these poor, willing, humble, creatures.

We left our venerable patriarch sitting in his porch, with a little boy and girl on each knee, to whom he was father, though there seemed a distance of three generations between them. In about an hour, we arrived at the Parahupeba, a considerable stream, that runs meandering through a low flat country, bordered by a considerable margin of meadow at each side. This was a rare sight, as the ground on the rivers of Brazil, generally rises abruptly from the banks. The land on each side was well-peopled and cultivated. We were informed, that the inhabitants had exhausted their means in searching for gold, and abandoned their speculations, and of necessity, had turned their attention to farming, so that we did not meet with a single lavra for two days, but had latterly seen many well-cultivated fazendas.

At ten o'clock we arrived at the arrayal of Redondo. The word arrayal, by which the villages of the interior are distinguished, signifies an entrenchment, or camp, and they were originally the stations in which Europeans fortified themselves, among the native Indians. I observed they generally stood on a hill, and were calculated to overlook the surrounding country, or defend themselves when attacked. Redondo seems to have been an old, and once a more respectable village than at present. Part of the street was paved, having a broad causeway of large stones. At present, it consists of a few mud-built houses. It has, however, a church, and is surrounded with rich plantations of cana and bananas.

At a little distance from hence, on ascending a rising ground, we caught a view of two magnificent serras. One was that of Ouro Branco, running in a vast rugged ridge towards the east, distant about seven leagues, having Villa Rica at the other side; the other, running nearly north and south, was that of Congonhas, having the town of Congonhas do Campo at its base. The whole formed a grand chain of rocky mountains piled up to the clouds, and occupying a semicircle of the horizon. In an hour from hence we passed the Rio das Congonhas. It

was here a considerable stream about thirty yards across; it wound its way, like the Parahupeba, through a rich margin of meadows, and its course was visible for a considerable distance, to the town of the same name, that stood on each side of the stream, looking very respectable with its white houses and churches.

The place derives its name from the abundance of the congonha plant found here. It is the matté of Paraguay, and used universally as tea. It grows in marshy places, and Patricio brought me some branches of it from the banks of the river. It attains the size of an orange tree, and has somewhat its air and aspect. The branches are slender and tapering; the leaves oblong, lance-shaped, and slightly serrated at long intervals. The flowers consist of five white petals, and grow in clusters, sessile, and axillary. The leaves are dried, or rather roasted on twigs before the fire, where they crackle like laurel, and are then reduced nearly to powder and kept in pots. It is used sometimes as a hot and sometimes a cold infusion. I have drunk it prepared in three ways; either an infusion of the fresh leaves, or made with the dried leaves, like China tea, or boiled with sugar and then drained off. The clear infusion exactly resembles that of common green tea; but it is insipid, and

has nothing of its flavour or odour, nor, as far as my feelings warranted me to say, of its exhilarating or refreshing quality. It is used in great quantities in Paraguay, particularly in mines, where it is supposed to correct the quality of the noxious vapours; but in Brazil it has no such reputation. I could not find that it was particularly used by the miners. Its genus, I believe, is not well ascertained; by some it is considered a species of holly.*

At this point we arrived at a natural bridge between two deep ravines. The ground had fallen away on both sides, and left nothing but a very narrow isthmus, with a deep precipice on each side over which the dangerous road passed: as the process goes on the whole will very soon fall away, and this line of road will be altogether intercepted. From this the path became exceedingly rugged, over bare ledges of rock of a trap formation, which we had to climb up like stairs. Pursuing one of these ledges, which I supposed was the road, my horse stopped and began to snort; on looking forward, I saw that he had come to the edge of a steep precipice, down which one step more would have precipitated us, and on looking round I

* Ilex vomitoria;—also Cassine paragua.—*Miller's Dictionary*, T. 83, Fig. 2. Pers. Synops.

saw my companions at a considerable distance below me. On one side of me was the perpendicular face of the rock, on the other the shelving side of a steep mountain, and before me a deep precipice, and the ledge was altogether too narrow to turn. My first endeavour was to dismount, and, leaving the horse there, proceed for assistance to get him down; but this I could not accomplish on the narrow ledge, which was not wide enough for me and the horse, so I sat in no small anxiety to know how I should extricate myself. At length the animal himself began to move backwards, and with much caution and sagacity, crushing my leg the whole way against the rock, he gained a wide place, and rescued us both from considerable peril.

After mid-day we arrived at the venda of Chepado do Mato, kept by an exceedingly rude and forward old lady; she had coarse sharp features, large ear-rings, and her grey hair, artificially curled, surrounded her sallow face as if in a storm. She set her hands a-kimbo, described the excellence of her wine with great volubility, and was quite displeased because we would not drink it for our breakfast, but preferred coffee, which she would hardly condescend to make for us. As a contrast to her, there stood in the

hall a poor black minstrel boy, who played a very simple instrument. It consisted of a single string stretched on a bamboo, bent into an arc, or bow. Half a cocoa nut, with a loop at its apex, was laid on his breast on the concave side; the bow was thrust into this loop, while the minstrel struck it with a switch, moving his fingers up and down the wire at the same time. This produced three or four sweet notes, and was an accompaniment either to dancing or singing. He stood in the porch, and entertained us like a Welsh harper, while we were at breakfast, and he was so modest that when we praised his music, he actually blushed through his dusky cheeks. It was the first time that a branco, or white, had ever paid him such a compliment. We left our rude hostess, who gave us to understand she thought us shabby persons, because we would not drink some wine with our coffee, and hastened to cross the serra of Ouro Branco, which now lay before us.

This serra, so called from the mines of white gold found in its bosom, is crossed in this direction by a very wild and solitary pass, and of no good repute in the country. Capao da Lana lay on the other side, still distant nearly fourteen miles; the evening was fast falling, and no other resting-place between us. When

we entered the glen which led to the pass, the sun was nearly setting; and we saw the great rugged ridge bristling with its rocky peaks towards the horizon before us, where it would be impossible to find our way in the dark, and this we had now to climb over with our jaded horses. The glen was of great extent, with rugged stratified rocks rising at each side to a vast height, like Glencrow, in Argyleshire; but there was "no rest and be thankful" road to lead us out of it; it was merely a rugged broken pathway, and as we advanced, every thing about us became more wild and solitary. Among the rocks was an immense projection which had obstructed the way; and it had been necessary to remove it. It proved to be a large mass of iron-stone; and tons of the ore were now piled up in heaps, at each side of the road, of the richest and most valuable quality, containing about ninety per cent. of metal; yet this most useful article lay here despised, while the speculations for gold employed every one's attention. The Indians, more wise, exchanged bars of gold for nails of iron.

Patricio, who was leading the way, now suddenly stopped, bent forward with the greatest earnestness, and fixed his dark and gleaming eye

on some horrible object in a thicket beside the road. It occurred to me, that some of the banditti who were said to infest this glen, were concealed there, and I expected every moment to see them burst out; but presently there appeared, what seemed to me to be one of the most beautiful objects in nature. It was the cobra coral, or coral serpent. It was of an elegant taper form, about a yard long; its glossy skin striped with alternate bands of crimson and azure, varying their hues as it moved in graceful sinuosities along the grass; and its diamond eyes beamed with so bright yet mild a lustre, that my first impulse was to take the lovely creature up, and cherish it in my bosom. Not so, Patricio; he started back to the greatest possible distance, at which he could reach it with his long staff, and then attacked it with the ferocity of a tiger; his eyes gleaming like fire at every blow, till it lay motionless on the grass. It seems, this lovely creature is reputed the most deadly of the serpent tribe, more so even than the rattle-snake, as there has been no antidote yet discovered against its poison; and when Patricio had deprived it of life, he walked off with an erect figure, and the conscious look of a man, who thought he had "done the state some service." Unwilling

to leave so curious an object of natural history behind, I alighted to take it up, but he again darted back, eagerly drew me away, and would not suffer me to go near it. There was still a slight motion perceptible in its tail, so he again attacked it till life was totally extinct. He was then going to cut it to pieces with his faca, but as I was anxious to preserve it, he took a stick, and making a slit in it, caught in it the neck, and then with great repugnance handed it to me at arm's length, with the snake hanging by the head. I brought it on to Capão, and then embalmed it in a bottle of caxas.

It was now so late, that we despaired of crossing the serra, so we called a council to know what we should do, and Patricio informed us there was a small rancho still deeper in the glen, at a place called Rodeo. As this pass was so wild, and bore so bad a name, we asked him if the keeper was to be trusted. He shrugged up his shoulders and said, "Every married man was counted honest in this country, but he could say no more for him." We therefore determined to be guided by the appearance of the place, and the countenance of the people. The rancho was a miserable shed, but daubed with a suspicious disguise of a little paint and whitewash. The inmates

consisted of an elderly man and his wife, with two sons; and a more cadaverous and repulsive group we never looked at. They pressed us with the most officious earnestness to stop, magnified the danger and difficulty of the serra, where they said we should be lost in the dark, and, as we found afterwards, greatly exaggerated the actual distance. We, however, resolved to push on, our sagacious guide thinking it better even to pass the night in the mountains, than in the den of a bandit's family.

We left our disappointed hosts, with a very dark scowl on their countenances; and a little further on, came to the foot of the formidable serra. We hastened to clamber up the sides as fast as our jaded and stumbling horses could proceed, and arrived at the summit. The sun had set below, but here we caught his parting rays, and had a sublime view of the vast solitude about us; the tops of the mountains just illumined by a momentary gleam, and the deep glens in dark shade below. As we knew the light rapidly closed after sun-set, we hastened down the other side; but we were suddenly involved in darkness long before we were extricated from the passes: Patricio, however, with his usual sagacity, wound his way with unerring

instinct, and long after dark brought us safe to Capão da Lana.

The venda of Capão is a large establishment, to accommodate the concourse of passengers who make it their place of rest, after crossing the serra. The proprietor is also an extensive fazendeiro, and owner of the topaz mines. He is called the man with two fathers; for two rich proprietors laid claim to him as their son, and evinced their sense of paternity, by leaving him each a large fazenda. The people of the house were among the rudest we had met; and whenever we spoke to each other, came up, leaned on the table, and looked full in our faces. A mulatto, who attended as a waiter, was particularly offensive in this way. We turned him out several times, but he always came back with a stupid absence of perception that he was giving offence, and that want of tact of incapability of discerning what was decorous or proper, which we often observed among Brazilians of his class.

Through the large area of the house there ran a limpid stream, whose gurgling sound was very pleasant, and we hoped it would lull us to repose when we lay down. But the moment every thing was silent, a loud din of the most discordant sounds burst from the stream, which

continued all night. This proceeded from the multitude of frogs which made their abode there, and, like the *ranæ palustres* of Horace, completely averted sleep. The noise in this place was the third distinct diversity of sound we had heard from these animals: the first proceeded from the ferradors, or smiths; the second from the assobiadors, or whistlers; and now from the grasnadors, or croakers. It was a very loud, deep base, that caused a sense of vibration in every thing about us. This extraordinary variety in the noise made by animals, in every other respect the same, argued a singular diversity in the structure of the muscles of the larynx, which would be a nice and curious subject of investigation.

A large topaz mine, of which our host was the proprietor, lay about a mile from the rancho, and the next morning we visited it. The regions through which we had passed, were generally clay mountains or granite ridges; we had now entered a new formation, a soft schist of talk, clay, or mica slate, which every where presented its lamellated edges in low ridges, just above the soil. In some places it was hard and solid, as building slate; in others it was soft and friable, and in various states of decomposition. About fifty years ago, in

pushing a road through one of these soft schistic knolls, which stood in their way, they were astonished to see several crystals of topaz tumble out of the soft mass. On this discovery they began to search; and they have now found and opened three large mines in the neighbourhood, within a circle of ten or twelve miles. The mine of Capão do Lana is an immense circular quarry, the shape of a hollow inverted cone, whose upper circumference is a mile or more. The sloping sides are composed of talk, or mica slate, either green, grey, or blue, and in a state of such decomposition, as to be quite soft, hardly retaining any of its lamellated structure. This is called the corpo da formação, or the substance in which the topaz veins are formed. These veins are a white medullary mass, called massa branca, resembling soft chalk, though not calcareous, but is supposed to be some modification of mica. It forms cords as thick as an arm or leg, running for several yards, and ramifying into various smaller branches. This massa branca is the matrix in which the topaz is imbedded, like a nodule of flint in a lump of chalk.

The operation by which we saw this mine worked was as follows: a stream was conducted from a neighbouring river to its upper

edge; and from hence, a circular channel was cut, with a quick descent, in a spiral manner round the side, till it arrived at the lowest part, where it was suffered to issue, and let off by another cut. Twenty naked negroes were placed in the bed of this water-course, at different intervals, with large hoes in their hands; and over them, on the bank above, stood the overseer, with a large bag in one hand, and a long rod in the other. When all was ready, the water was let in above, and it came down in an impetuous torrent, undermining and washing away the foundations of the soft bank, which was constantly falling down in large masses. These masses, it was the business of the negroes to back with the hoes; and when they exposed a white lump, they took it up, opened it, and threw the topazes it might contain to the overseer above, who put them into his bag. As the torrent was very strong, it frequently carried them down along with the dissolved mass; and in order to intercept them, such another troop of negroes was placed in the water after it had issued from the mine. These stood in the middle of the current, and gathered up with their hands all the gravel carried down, which they threw into shallow pits made in the banks. Here any topaz en-

tangled in it, became immediately visible; it was hastily picked up by the negro, who to save time, chucked it into his mouth, and went on gathering the passing gravel. When their mouths became full, a basin was brought round, into which they spit all that was so collected.

From hence we proceeded to the mine of Boa Vista, about four miles distant. This consists of a very large irregular space of decomposed schist, so soft, that we sank above our ancles when we attempted to cross it. Here a number of negroes, with rude knives like pieces of iron hoop, were scarifying the ground. When they cut across a white vein, it immediately became visible, and they pursued it, dislodging the topazes which were bedded inside, and handing them to an overseer with a bag. The quantity collected here is always most abundant after rain; the surface then breaks up, and the massa branca is seen peeping from under the rupture, without further search. In passing across with the proprietor, who obligingly came with me, I picked up a lump of the massa branca, with a nest of crystals inside, which had just appeared; and the man suffered me to keep it as a curiosity, without receiving any compensation.

The town of Boa Vista, where a topaz market

is established, was at a short distance; and when we arrived, we caused Patricio to notify that we wished to purchase some. Immediately our horses were surrounded by groups of merchants, every one bringing forward his hoard, in bags, bowls, and dishes. They were not of a superior quality, but they were proportionately cheap. The market began rather high, but we might pick and choose for a patac, or about 1*s.* 6*d.* each. Presently, however, there came such a glut, that we had them at our own price; and the market left off at a vintem, that is, about one penny a score! Indeed we purchased little bowls of them for any thing we pleased to give. The greater number of them was very rude, truncated at both ends, and the angles very irregular. Some, however, were exquisitely beautiful; the crystals perfectly formed, and terminated at the extremities by their proper angles. Some were still bedded in the massa branca in which they were found; and are curious specimens of this kind of formation.

It is generally supposed that the topazes of Brazil are found, like those of Saxony and Siberia, bedded in granite rocks, and shooting from a matrix of quartz. Such a formation, I believe, is not known in these mines, nor have any crystals been discovered, except in the massa branca,

though I did see at Rio a single specimen of one shooting from quartz, but I could not learn from whence it came. From the soft texture, however, of the massa branca, and the very loose and detachable manner in which the topazes were held, as well as from the great irregularity, in general, in which they were bedded, it seems very probable that this mass was not the original matrix of the crystal, but that some convulsion had disturbed their first formation, and scattered them in the way in which they are now found. They were generally broken off, apparently from some hard surface, to which they had been attached, and the fractures were visible, not only at the ends, but at the sides; and as it required no force to detach them from the soft doughy medium in which they were involved, the defect was not caused by the workmen, but by some antecedent violence. Indeed, the whole country, for several leagues in this direction, exactly resembled the formation of the mines. On every side, knolls of schist, in different states of decomposition, appeared rising from the soil; and as the road was constantly cut through them, when they stood in the line; it is no great exaggeration to say, that the soft paste through which we passed was still the corpo da formacão, and

our way was paved or strewed with topazes.

The general colour of the topaz here is yellow; when heated, it becomes red, and is positively electric on one side, and negative on the other. The topaz of Germany becomes white, by a similar process, proving that the colouring matter of both is different. The white topazes of Brazil frequently pass for diamonds. A French jeweller, some time ago, cut and set seventy-one in different trinkets, and sold them in Paris as diamonds. An inquiry, however, was made into their quality, and he was tried and fined for the fraud. The topaz was, I believe, the chrysolite of the ancients, and called so from the avidity with which it was searched for, in an island in the Red Sea.*

The village of Boa Vista consists of forty or fifty houses, built at irregular intervals, over a flat surface, on the summit of a hill, so as to form a very wide street, at the extremity of which, stands a white church, surrounded by an immense number of wooden crosses, of all sizes, and stuck up in all directions: they were sometimes at a considerable distance from

* Τοπαζω quære. Plin. lib. xxxvii. cap. 8.

the church, and before the doors of houses. Not far from the town is the serra of Boa Vista. It consists of a number of conical hills, covered with the richest green-sward. One of them out-topped the rest, forming an immense regular mound, swelling with its verdant bosom to the sky, and presenting on all sides a surface of singular beauty. This was called, by way of eminence, Boa Vista. It was a holiday, and the inhabitants were all out, dressed in their best clothes. They are, on such occasions, remarkably neat in their persons. Their white cotton vestments are so pure, and their coloured ones so vivid, that when they walk in groups along the dark green-sward, they look quite picturesque, and add considerably to the scenery.

Immediately on leaving Boa Vista, we heard the distant muttering in the mountains; it comes from the horizon like some mysterious warning, which is never sent in vain: however fine and beautiful the day, when it is heard, it is immediately followed by a war of elements, and a deluge of rain. In a very short time, dark masses of clouds advanced from all sides, and formed a canopy over us. The electric fluid burst forth, and the usual quantity of water followed, which poured down on us in torrents, till we reached

Villa Rica. The worst roads in the province are those that lead to the imperial city. It was evident, that once on a time, much labour and expense had been incurred in making this avenue accessible, but it was so no longer. A paved road had extended a considerable way from the town, but it had long been broken up, and the materials lay about encumbering the ground, rendering nearly impassable a way naturally difficult. Through this we stumbled along, at a slow pace, under a storm of wind, rain, thunder and lightning, till we arrived at a stone causeway, ascending up the side of a steep hill, having one solitary house at the top. We crept up this with great caution, and then found ourselves at the head of the main street of Villa Rica, which descended in a long avenue of houses down the other side.

Nothing could be more dismal than the decayed aspect this once golden city presented. At the bottom of the causeway stood the remains of a very large edifice, with a variety of offices, and gardens laid out in a princely manner by some gold-dreaming speculator; it was now a heap of ruins. On the top stood a large building, with an ornamented front, having mouldings and cornices to the windows and roofs, with balconies and verandas in a respectable style:

we were informed that this was the estalagem. We ascended to a long corridor, and a negress came with a key, and opened for us a large apartment, which we were to occupy; but such an apartment!—the lattices of the windows were hanging in rags, the ceiling and walls had fallen in, and the floor was drenched with rain. We asked for another, but all the others were in keeping with the first. The comfortless misery of such a place to wet and weary travellers was intolerable, so we rushed out of the grand hotel of the imperial city, to seek for an humbler and drier shed. At the opposite side we found another, nearly as large and ragged, but somewhat less wet, and here we established ourselves.

As soon as the deluge of rain subsided, we went out to see the city. In a vast hollow, surrounded by an amphitheatre of very steep mountains, is a flat bottom of several hundred acres, into which all the streams that run down the sides of the mountains discharge themselves. As there appeared to have been originally no outlet from this bottom, the water must have accumulated and formed a lake of great depth, till it ascended as high as one of the sides, over which it ran, and so carried off the surplus water, like an overshot dam. On examining

the low ridge which bounds the plain on one side, the exterior surface of the rock seemed washed down by some broad fall of water; and as there is now no communication by which water could run in that direction, it struck me that it must have been caused by the overflowings of the lake from the other side, when it had reached that level. The continued pressure of the water, however, against this natural embankment, caused it to rupture, and a passage was effected for it through the chasm which it made, and through which a considerable stream was running; but this is not the only outlet, for it flows besides through several arched passages made in this mound, as if it had eaten for itself a subterraneous outlet through the soft rock, at the time when part of it gave way in another place.

The bottom of this supposed lake is now a long horizontal sandy plain of unequal breadth, through which the mountain torrents which run into it, make their way in a variety of channels, and find their exit either by the great rupture, or the smaller arched caverns. On the north side of this the town is built, having one very long street extending up and down hill for nearly two miles along the side of the sandy bottom, connected by several stone bridges thrown over

the torrents, that intersect it in their way down, as they tumble from the mountains above; and this long street terminates in a very curious assemblage of houses, built on abrupt eminences, and ascended by very steep passages.

Some of the intelligent people here think, that the sandy bottom was originally the crater of a volcano, which having become extinguished, had, like many similar cavities, been filled up with water, and so became a lake. Conceive then yourself standing at the bottom, and a serra of lofty rugged rocks skirting the horizon surrounding you, and one of them considerably higher than the rest, terminated by a fantastic pillar-like knob, having some resemblance to a human form, and for that reason called by the Indians, Ita Columi, or the child of stone;—conceive the mountains declining from this and forming a vast circle, in the centre of which is a deep cavity, like the crater of a volcano;—conceive a number of projecting rocks with white houses standing in clusters on the summits of all the salient angles, looking down into the crater, and this will give you an idea of the present appearance of this very singular town. Had the bottom been still a lake, and the mountains about it been covered with their primeval woods, Villa Rica would be per-

haps the most romantic and picturesque town in the world; but as it now stands, in the midst of bare sterile mountains, whose naked flanks are ruptured and torn open in search of gold, leaving no objects but unsightly quarries above, and an irksome sandy muddy plain below, the look of the town is singularly repulsive and disagreeable.

We found the interior of the town, however, in a better condition: where the long street terminates, there are several others lined with neat houses, kept clean and in good repair, having shops filled with a great variety and good assortment of all kinds of ware; cotton goods from Manchester, broad-cloths from Yorkshire, stockings from Nottingham, hats from London, and cutlery from Sheffield, actually sold in the heart of the mountains of South America, as abundant and almost as cheap, as in the towns where they were manufactured; and when I saw about me every where the produce of the labour of our hands, I could not help exclaiming with Eneas, and with a more literal application, *Quæ regio in terris nostri non plena laboris.** Proceeding still further along the winding of the hill's side, we ascended to the

* Virg. Æn. lib. I. p. 460.

praça, where the government-house is situated on the summit of a very steep street. In front is a parapet, which commands a magnificent view of the whole town and vicinity; but the edifice is rendered ridiculous by a number of small swivels mounted on the walls, not larger than pop-guns, and which seem rather intended to amuse boys than as the defensive preparation of men; and in fact, their sole use is for the boyish pastime of making a noise on festal days, an amusement of which the Brazilians of Villa Rica are as fond as those of Rio. This court-end of the town is really pretty. Descending from the palace we crossed a green square, at one end of which stood the camera of the ouvidor, and at another a handsome church; and from hence are several good houses in excellent order, inhabited by people of distinction and those attached to the offices of government.

This strange-built town, therefore, may be divided into three distinct parts: the long and almost interminable street by which we entered, where artizans chiefly reside, and where are several workshops, in which braziers, smiths, and other operative mechanics were plying their trades, in different home manufactures; the centre of the town, where several cross streets

intersect, filled with opulent shopkeepers, selling the goods of foreign manufacture; and the court, where the idle and independent take up their abode. Scattered through this space, there are nine churches built on detached and conspicuous points, giving an air of considerable consequence to the town. Indeed, these churches are a distinguished feature in every part of Brazil. They are the first object seen in a distant town, and the Matriz is the pride and boast of the inhabitants. There are besides a theatre, which is open on certain festival days; several public fountains ornamented with sculpture, from which brazen dolphins and other figures are continually spouting streams of pure water; and, in fact, every thing that strikes the eye forcibly reminds a stranger, that it was once a place of great wealth and consequence. It is still thriving, though greatly decayed; the habitable houses amount to 1,500, and the actual inhabitants, I was informed from the best authority, were 7,000; they have established a printing-press, and published a newspaper called "O Universal," but, as yet, have no public library or literary society.

When the Paulistas first penetrated into this region, they found the district here abounded in a species of gold that acquired a dark hue

on exposure to the atmosphere; this is now known, as I have stated, to arise from an alloy of silver, which becomes oxydated or tarnished in the air; but the Paulistas called the place where it was found, the serra of Ouro Preto, or the mountains of black gold. Here they resorted in great numbers, and in 1711, they built a town on the spot, under the direction of Antonio Dias, and called it by the same name as the mountain. The quantity of gold found soon rendered it famous; it became the common centre of attraction for speculators from all parts, and from its distinguished opulence changed its name to Villa Rica, or the rich city, and was recognized as the capital of the Minas Geraes, and the residence of the governor. In 1823, it was determined to erect all capitals of provinces into cities, and a decree was then issued for changing its name into Imperial Cidade do Ouro Preto. The principal Caza de Fundacão, or gold foundry of the province, was established here, to which sixteen officers are attached, among whom are three founders and two assayers; the receipts of this have been astonishingly augmented within these few years by the per centage paid by the Gongo Soco Company on the gold they raised, which amounted in the year 1827, to 20,982*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*

The great depository of wealth was the sands in the bottom below the town. Here, after rain, immense deposits of the precious metal were found; and an old person informed me, he remembered to have seen the whole population among the sands, after a period of heavy rains, raking, scraping, and fighting, and, to use his own expression, up to their knees in gold-dust. The remains of these auriferous inundations are yet visible; the edges of all the streams which intersect it, are still covered with what appears to be black sand, but on examination I found it to be esmeril, or the magnetic iron, which is known always to accompany gold-dust, and which had been rejected and left behind, when the precious grains were extracted. The sudden and enormous wealth acquired in this way, was soon bruited about with great exaggeration: people flocked here till the population at one time amounted to 30,000 persons; large edifices were every where erected by the residents, and grand hotels for the visiters; and to a stranger, the town really appeared the most opulent in the world.

After some time, however, the source of its opulence began to fail, the currents brought down but a scanty and irregular supply, and the disappointed speculators were ruined. A few

fortunate adventurers succeeded in lighting on rich streams, and built fine edifices; and others, equally sanguine, did the same by anticipation, and were disappointed. In the meantime the riches on the surface were neglected for the imaginary ones they expected from below; the vegetable soil was destroyed by washing, and the capital, which might have converted it into permanent wealth, was exhausted in visionary projects; and the inhabitants, without arable land or means to cultivate it, became a nest of beggars, and the town a heap of ruins, as infamous for its crimes, as it had been famous for its riches. It was filled with needy gamblers in gold; their moral habits, like those of all who live at hazard, were totally depraved, and they became robbers and assassins; scarce a night passed that murders were not perpetrated in the streets, and a respectable inhabitant informed me, that all the atrocities detailed in the English newspapers in a year, did not amount to those which were perpetrated unnoticed in the dark alleys of Villa Rica. By degrees, however, these desperadoes were all absorbed; they were either killed off, or they abandoned the place, till the population was reduced from thirty to seven thousand, at which it still remains. This remnant, taught by experience, are wisely directing their

attention to other and more profitable objects; it is now a thriving and industrious place, and has changed its ill-omened and ill-applied name for that of another.

It was in the midst of the rainy season I visited it; and I expected to have seen, as I had heard, that the whole population would be raking in the sands. They were reduced, however, to a few negroes belonging to persons who still lingered in their old habits, and obtained a few patacs a-day by their petty speculations. Some of them were turning up the stones, and eagerly watching what would appear under them. Some were boys riddling sand in a bowl; they were young gamblers, who were betting copper coins about the quantity of gold they should find in the bowl, and were as fiercely excited as the fellows we see in the outlets of London, playing pitch and toss. One group consisted of an old negro and his wife, now past their labour, but who had pursued gold-finding in this place for the last half century. We asked him what he had found; he shook his head and said, nada—"nothing."

The population in the town was otherwise engaged. I stopped at a brazier's shop, who was fabricating pots and kettles, from sheet-copper sent from England. He exalted his manu-

factured metal, though foreign, above the native gold, and soon hoped, he said, to see mines of it opened in this place. Beside him was a blacksmith, still better employed; he was forging shovels, hammers, hinges, and a variety of domestic implements from native iron. He was an intelligent, obliging man, talked freely and cheerfully with us, agreed that the iron of the country was far more valuable than the gold, for he said it never could be exhausted, since the streets were paved with it; and he pointed to the stones; in fact, every second stone before his door, was a mass of iron, so rich, as to appear to be almost in a metallic state; and indeed, most of the ore found in the country, yields from eighty to ninety per cent., and has besides the peculiar advantage of being immediately malleable, and fit for the fabrication of all kinds of implements.

It does not at all appear, that the native Indians were apprised of the properties of iron, or had ever applied it to use, as their fishing-hooks, and other implements, had been made of gold, a metal more obvious in its primitive state, and more easily wrought upon. It was, however, long known to the Portuguese Brazilians, who worked it up into some trifling implements for their own use; but the knowledge

that the country possessed so valuable a metal, was for a long time carefully concealed from foreigners. To such an extent was this jealous precaution carried, that even the natives were strictly prohibited from using it. An intelligent young man, in the Minas Geraes, who had made himself acquainted with its properties, fabricated a lock from it, and sent it to Portugal, hoping to receive, as he deserved, a reward for his ingenuity; instead of which, he was severely reprimanded for his presumption, and forbidden to fabricate any other article. When foreigners, therefore, were first permitted to explore the country, they were astonished to find a metal, of whose existence they had not heard, and began by collecting specimens of this precious discovery, till, in a day's journey, they became so overloaded, that they cast them all away.

The first iron extracted from the mines of Brazil, in any significant quantity, was when the foundry of S. João de Ipanema was established in the comarca of Sorocaba, in the province of St. Paul's. Before that period, the Brazilians were obliged to import it, for every purpose of war or peace, for arms and utensils. Gold was the only metal sought after, which was afterwards given in exchange for foreign

iron, though the metal was in profuse abundance, even on the surface of the soil in every district. In the year 1818, Dom John brought over some Swedish miners, and under the direction of Colonel Frederic Varnagem, who deserves to be considered among the benefactors of the country, the object of manufacturing native iron was accomplished.

The great impediment which had prevented the Brazilians from working their own mines, was the refractory nature of the metal, and the difficulty of smelting it. Their knowledge and practice of metallurgy, was confined to gold, which every one found already in a metallic state, and the small grains were easily melted into ingots. They now, for the first time, erected in the country lofty air furnaces, of fire-proof materials, capable of resisting a violent degree of heat; and the effects detailed in the Brazilian annals, seem as if they were supposed to be something miraculous. In October, 1818, the first fire was lighted in the furnaces, and on the 27th of the month, ore was introduced. On the 30th, the bellows began to blow; and, on the 1st of November, the day of All-saints, the metal was seen to run for the first time, at nine o'clock in the morning, just before the celebration of mass, and it was announced

in the chapel by the shouts of the congregation.

The immediate result of this wonderful success, as it was deemed, was to cast a gigantic cross of the first fusion of the metal, weighing eight quintals, to be placed on the summit of the Garrassoavo mountain. A solemn procession was formed to conduct it to its station, where it was erected as a grand memorial in this conspicuous place. The greatest expectation was entertained from this foundry. It was distant only four days from water-carriage, and it was expected that it would supersede the consumption of all other iron in Brazil, and afford the most abundant supply to other countries. The natives were fully sensible of the value and importance of this establishment, which they considered a new epocha in the country.*

* The "Investigator," a periodical work of the day, thus expresses itself:—"The smelting of iron forms a grand era of glory and future wealth to Brazil; and having taken this important step, the country must advance rapidly to the rank of a great nation. Of all the benefits which Brazil has received from the heroic passage of the throne of Portugal to the territories of America, none is to be compared to this, either in its present or the fecundity of its future profits, so that in our opinion, the whole of the iron extracted from this first attempt should be cast into a gigantic pyramid, to be placed on the mountain that produced it, to attest not only to Brazil, but to the remotest posterity, the memorable epocha of their first labours."

About eight miles from Villa Rica, on the estate of Antonio Pereira, the roads are composed of iron rust; and in the vicinity, is a mountain of compact iron-stone, of specular hæmatites. This iron is of a very peculiar property; and it appears, by some experiments made at Gongo Soco, that it is so rich, that it forms at once malleable iron, and can with difficulty be reduced to the intermediate state of pig.

The rich ore is of three kinds—the jacotinga, or compact blue iron-stone, grey iron sand-stone, and a species called brown-crust. When these were roasted, and the aluminous and silicious parts destroyed, they were subjected to the magnet, and found to be very rich in metal, and they were put, with charcoal and limestone as a flux, into a furnace. The metal poured down in the usual time in a state of fusion, and on examining the quality of the iron so obtained, it was not found as expected — pig or cast iron, which required a second process before it could be used for the fabrication of different tools, but it was perfectly malleable, and so ready for the hammer. This, which would appear a favourable circumstance in general, was a great disappointment to the foundry; for the great object was to obtain

materials for different parts of machinery which are only formed of cast iron.

The difference between cast and malleable iron, is this; that the pig contains a certain proportion of carbon, on which its friability depends, and its capability for being recast into whatever form is required; and that bar, or malleable iron, is produced by a subsequent process of refining, which is done by expelling the carbon. But it appears that the carbon here always escaped in the first instance, leaving, as Mr. Baird says, "a very fine malleable iron behind, superior to any he had seen in the furnaces in England."

About fourteen leagues, or sixty-eight miles north from Villa Rica, is the estate of Gongo Soco. It is situated in a beautiful vale, and about four miles in length, and two in breadth. On one side is a chain of auriferous hills, covered with wood, and on the other, hills and vales of pasture, surrounded by more distant mountains, so as to form a circular inclosure. Through the centre runs a rivulet. The banks of this stream were, at first, the only portion of the estate where gold was searched for; and, like other lavras of the country, bear marks of the extent to which they were washed. The first person who established himself here

as a miner, was a Portuguese of the name of Bittencourt, who, about the year 1740, began to work the soil with his own hands, and in a short time became so rich that he purchased many slaves, and sent to Portugal for his nephew, Manoel Camara, whom he left his sole heir. His sons inherited the property, and soon fell into those habits of dissipation which such property generally entails in Brazil; so that the estate was sold for 9,000 crusados, and bought by capitão môr, Joze Alves, twenty years ago. This new proprietor, being a more intelligent man than usual, imagined that he was only extracting the mere refuse of the gold, and leaving untouched the source from whence it proceeded. He therefore searched the hills above, and found in a wood, large lumps of the metal in micaceous iron-stone; and on washing away the surface, he discovered a lode of the same auriferous iron-stone, equally rich, and about forty feet broad; the fragments of which, he justly supposed, had furnished the earth below with its golden particles. This discovery soon spread, and a village was formed in the vale by a concourse of people, who came here to live on washing again, the muddy deposits rejected by the proprietor.

In the year 1818, he began to work more

systematically, and followed the direction of the lode, by pushing levels. By these means he discovered certain circular deposits, formed by the concurrence of veins, which yielded collections of gold in a quantity hitherto unknown. So that in 1824, in one month, he is said to have taken out 480 pounds. The whole estate was found to be generally of this quality. In the common pastures were seen pyrites of sulphuret of iron, containing much gold, and all the hills were ascertained to be rich in the metal, and the soil below every where impregnated with its deposit.

Having heard of the great riches of this estate, the Imperial Brazilian Mining Company, formed in England, sent Mr. Edward Oxenford, with competent miners, to examine it in 1825. Their report was very favourable. They found the mine had been worked with more science than usual, in Brazil. Three levels had been pushed into the mountain; one of which extended fifty or sixty yards. The lodes consisted of jacotinga, a dark brown-red oxyde of iron and manganese, very soft, rather of a saponaceous or greasy feel, and washed and worked without difficulty. This corpo da formacão was forty yards wide; a quart measure of it was taken up, and washed in their presence by

negroes, when it was found to contain 278 grains of gold, some of a large size. It was calculated by Mr. Tregoning, chief miner, that the labour of 100 men would extract from this mass, ten hundred weight of the metal in a year, as every fathom of the formacão would yield one pound of pure gold.

Besides the riches of the jacotinga, gold in great abundance was found to exist in a matrix of thick veins of quartz, situated in a part of the estate called Morro Grande; and a stamping mill had been erected by the proprietor, for the purpose of pounding and extracting the grains. But the other was so much more easily worked, and had latterly yielded such abundance, that the more difficult process had been abandoned, and the mill remained without being applied to any purpose.

Having been satisfied by the ocular inspection of competent persons, that the report was not exaggerated, proposals were made to the proprietor. His first demand was a million of crusados, or about 90,000*l.* The bargain, however, was finally concluded for 300,000 milreis, or about 70,000*l.* A petition was presented to the emperor to sanction this agreement, which was obtained on the 16th of September, 1824,

and the company took the name of the "Imperial Brazilian Mining Association."

Besides the estate of Gongo Soco, the association purchased those of Inficionado, or Catas Pretas, and Antonio Pereira. The latter is within eight miles of Villa Rica, and in part of the serra of Ouro Preto. A melancholy story is connected with it. About thirty years ago, the proprietor, Antonio Pereira, sunk a shaft ten braças or fathoms deep; and coming suddenly on a very rich deposite, he continued eagerly to pursue it, without waiting to take precautions to secure the shaft above. On one evening they discovered a vein so rich, that in about an hour just before dark, they extracted from it gold, to the value of three thousand milreis; and they looked forward to the morning to appropriate the vast treasure below. But a restless cupidity to be possessed of it at once, would not suffer them to allow a moment's delay; and the foreman with several slaves continued below, labouring all night at the golden discovery. When the proprietor hastened early in the morning to the shaft, there was no trace of it to be seen; the ill-secured earth had closed over those who were undermining it below, and the treasure and the

workmen were buried ten fathom deep in the mountain. Several efforts were afterwards made to come again at this spot, and large sums of money expended by Simão Fereira, and other persons in succession, but hitherto without effect; and it remains for the Gongo Soco company to find it. It will be a discovery of no common interest to come on this treasure again, covered up with a mass of human bodies, if they yet remain undecayed.

The working of the Gongo Soco mine, has not disappointed expectation. The gold is found in the formacão of jacotinga, of various degrees of induration; sometimes as compact as iron-stone, and sometimes as soft as clay. In the former case it is stamped like quartz; in the latter the miners bring it up, by filling their large leathern hats, and then washing the mass in the usual way. The gold is occasionally found as it is in the mines of Lagoa Dourado: a number of filaments radiate from a common centre; and on pursuing one of these threads, it frequently leads to a nucleus sometimes of an ounce weight, from which they issue in all directions. The workings are confined to about sixty yards of ground, and run about six feet below those of the former proprietor. The quantity obtained, according to the last report,

to the proprietors, from January to June, 1829, was 2037lbs. 4oz. 12dwts. 15grs., so that the anticipations of Mr. Tregoning are likely to be realized. The gold, however, is not so pure as the specimens raised at S. José, being only of about nineteen carats.

The number of Englishmen located there amounts to about one hundred and eighty; and the blacks and others employed in the works, form a population of upwards of six hundred persons; the whole under the superintendence of Captain Lyons. The estate nearly contains within itself the means of their support. The river of S. João runs through it, and its smaller branches supply abundant streams and water-courses; at Fazenda Velha is a large tract of arable land sufficient to raise produce; and at the Logoa das Antas are extensive pastures for cattle. Already they form a considerable village, which is hourly increasing; the foundation of a church has been laid, and if the speculation succeed progressively, as it has begun, an English town will soon expand itself in the interior of Brazil. The Bishop of London has appointed a chaplain to proceed to Gongo Soco, to administer to the spiritual comforts of the colony.

The benefits resulting to the Brazilians are

such, as they ought duly to appreciate. The revenue which the government already derives from it is important. The duty paid in December, 1827, at the caza da fundacão in Villa Rica, was 20,982*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, a sum equal to the value of all the gold raised in the comarca of Rio das Mortes, and passed into the caza of S. João d'el Rey in the same year. The duty on gold, paid at the caza da fundação of Sabara, for the last quarter of the year 1825, was one ounce!—This fact, which is officially known to be correct, speaks volumes in favour of the advantages to the country, from the establishment of the foreign mining companies. The company also leave a deposit of 21,688*l.*, of which the Brazilian government have the use, and for which they pay no interest.

The introduction of so many white men into a country where the preponderance of the black population is so alarming, is an acquisition continually increasing in value and importance as the colony extends; while the improved implements of every kind which they use, the machinery they set in motion, the expertness in manual dexterity at which they arrive, and the abridgment of labour which they effect, are lessons of the greatest value to the natives in

every process of exertion in which they are engaged.

But above all it appears to me, that abstracting the natives from the pursuit of gold themselves, will be one of the most important benefits that foreign companies will confer. The metal will be sought on its proper site, and not on the arable soil, which God designed for other uses, by enduing it with fertility to raise food for man. Instead of destroying this bounty of a good Providence as they have hitherto done, in their rude and clumsy process, and employing their time and property in ruinous and gambling speculations, they will turn their land and industry to their proper uses, in raising produce for the consumption of those, who are more rationally and harmlessly engaged, in searching for gold in the sterile bowels of the mountains.

The celebrated deputy, Vasconcellos, considered by his countrymen the Franklin or Adams of Brazil, is one of the deputies for the province, and lives in Villa Rica; I had letters to him from friends at Rio, and so was glad to avail myself of an opportunity of paying him a visit. His house is at the court end. When I inquired for him, his secretary informed

me he was engaged, but he said he would take in any message. I sent my letters, and sat down in the ante-chamber. Presently a door opened, and he made his appearance. He came up to me with the familiarity of an old acquaintance, took me cordially by the hand, and led me into his apartment, set me on a chair, and then sat opposite to me, looking me full in the face. He is a low, strong-built man, about forty-five, rather corpulent, with a strong-marked determined countenance, sallow complexion, dark eyes, projecting under-lip, with a profusion of black hair curling about his face. He was wrapped up in a plaid cloak, and old shoes for slippers; but accounted for his dishabille by saying, he laboured under a severe affection of his chest. At first, a considerable embarrassment occurred between us; he spoke only Portuguese, in which I could answer but very imperfectly, and we were likely to derive but little information from each other. I observed, however, that he spoke, as he said, a little French. His manners were as simple as those of a child, and I literally coaxed him to converse in that language. He began with timidity, measuring his words, and whenever he made a mistake, went back and corrected himself, as if he was composing an

exercise; by degrees, however, this wore off, and he expressed himself with great ease and precision. He requested me to spend the evening with him, and we returned at six o'clock.

He entertained us with liqueurs, conserves, and Minas cheese, and we passed a very agreeable evening; but I was concerned to find he was one of those, who cherished against England considerable prejudices. He was sorry, he said, to hear that the English government was hostile to Brazil and its constitution. I replied, that I thought he had no reason to imagine that, for the conduct of England had been always decidedly favourable and friendly. He inferred it, he said, from the distinguished manner in which Dom Miguel had been received. I asked him if he had not heard of the equally distinguished manner in which Dona Maria had been received? He said he had not, for the accounts had not yet reached Villa Rica. He then spoke of the English constitution, which he criticized severely, and gave his own greatly the preference, particularly in the mode of electing members, where no influence could be exerted; and he mentioned himself as an example of a man decidedly opposed to government, yet elected a deputy in a town, where that influence

was most powerful. I spoke of the mining companies as likely to benefit the country by the introduction of European habits and improved modes; he could not agree with me even in this, but said, their efforts were to abstract its wealth, to the prejudice of native speculators. In effect, I found him strongly imbued with old Brazilian prejudices, and not at all so well disposed towards us, as his fellow deputy, the ouvidor of S. João d'el Rey.

His apartment was hung round with framed engravings, of different views in England, and I asked him why he was not more favourably disposed to a country, of which he had so many memorials about him: he said, they were not his selection; his father was a Portuguese, and he had brought them from Lisbon. Although his general feeling of prejudice was so strong, I found him exceedingly urbane, with a great mixture of kindness and good nature, and a wish to render me any service, if I remained long, or proceeded further. We did not part till a late hour; and, notwithstanding the bad reputation of the town, we made our way home in the dark, without any accident.

Vasconcellos, as a deputy, possesses perhaps the greatest influence in Brazil. Of the seventeen members which the Minas Geraes send

to the chamber, he is always the first on the list; and in the returns made a few days before, he had 677 votes, where others had only 209. On the change of ministry, in June 1828, he had been invited to accept the situation of minister of justice, but had declined. It is among the inconsistencies of Vasconcellos, that he is an advocate for the slave-trade; and the treaty with England for its total abolition in a short time, and the supposed intention to enforce it, were among the causes for his indisposition towards us. On the day before I visited him, he had made a motion in the council-general of the province, for the necessity of extending the period marked for the cessation of the slave-trade. He stated that the province had been so scourged (flagellada) by the oppressive enrolments of her young men, and the ruinous expeditions of troops, that "the population was greatly diminished, not only by the abstraction of so many hands, but by the abandonment of others, who fled to avoid the same oppression, and slaves were absolutely necessary to supply the want of them." This, as a local reason, was true and plausible; but he concluded his speech by defending the principle. "They exclaim," said he, "against the injustice of this commerce,

and they give as examples, the immorality of some nations who have admitted it; but it has not been demonstrated, that slavery demoralizes a nation in the degree that exaggeration represents it. A comparison of Brazil with nations who have not slaves, will put this beyond doubt." He then suggested that the Brazilian government should treat with that of England, about the prorogation of the law, and moved that the council-general of the province should represent the *absolute necessity* of deferring the period, when the commerce of slaves should be abolished, as, by the fourth section of the eightieth article of the constitution, it could not have effect, since it had not been presented to the general assembly, after its conclusion, and before its ratification.

Next day we set out on our return. Our metallic money was exhausted, and we proffered our host a note; but he would have nothing to do with it, and insisted on his pound of copper with as much determination, as Shylock did his pound of flesh. There was a house in the street where Rio notes were discounted, and we requested him to send it there, and laid it on the counter of his venda for that purpose; but he shook his hands wide of it, and would not touch it; so, finding his horror of

paper insurmountable, we sent Patricio, who returned with a clerk, a civil young man, who explained to us that paper could not be exchanged for metal, but at a discount of thirty per cent. To this we agreed, and received for 10,000 reis, 6,200 in copper cobres, of two vintems each; a cobre being the great circulating coin of the Minas Geraes. We expected to have been paid in gold in this auriferous city at least, but a gold coin was unknown there in circulation, and could not be obtained, we were told, even at a discount of 200 per cent. It was a singular fact, that the only money to be found, in the midst of a country more abounding with gold and other metals, than any other in the world, should be bits of copper raised and manufactured in England. To compensate for the disappearance of gold, a paper currency was substituted, and a bank established at S. João d'el Rey. Notes were issued, so low, I believe, as half a patac, or 160 reis, so that the province, a few years ago, was deluged with such money. This has now ceased; but the people have ever since set their faces decidedly against paper, and it accounts for the horror of our host when we tendered it to him.

We left the imperial city in the same deluge

of rain we had entered it, and it continued without intermission during our return. Our way sometimes lay under ledges of rocks, where only a narrow path afforded us a passage; the water poured from the ledge over our heads as if it came from the eaves of a house; so that for a mile together, we sometimes were obliged to ride slowly, under a constant sheet of cataract. Patricio carried the whole way clothes and blankets for us in a waterproof bag, and we had always a dry change when we stopped for the night; but he had no such thing, and took no care for himself. He bore on his head nearly a hundred weight, under which he moved erect with an incessant creeping pace, so that if you looked at his body only, he seemed gliding along; he always led the way without the smallest appearance of fatigue, and had frequently to stop till we came up with him. When arrived at a resting place, he sometimes had to make his way into the woods, to cut fodder for the starving horses, and came back in the dark with a load of capim do mato on his head. Wet or dry, was all one to him. After an inclement day, and what would be to another an exhausting fatigue, he ate a few feijãos, lay down in his wet shirt on a mat or a bull's hide, and had every thing ready for our

departure before light in the morning. In passing through the woods he had always something rare or curious to show me. On one occasion, he suddenly turned off the path and disappeared in a dense forest. Knowing his mysterious ways we did not mind him; but he re-appeared at some distance before us, bearing in his hand a branch, loaded with the most beautiful fruit I had ever beheld. It was about the size and shape of a pear, covered with the downy skin of a peach, of the richest red and golden hue. The flesh of the fruit was a juicy pulp, of a cooling acid taste, and, with sugar, quite delicious. He called it preboora. I penetrated with him to examine the tree on which it grew. It was about seven feet high, with rotund alternate leaves, slightly serrated. I wished to see another tree, if possible, to examine its fructifications, but he knew of no other in these woods than that single one. The fruit contained three large kernel seeds inside, which I tried to preserve; but I could not dry them, and they moulded and decayed.

On our return to S. José, I was anxious to take Patricio with me on to Rio, as there was something in his Indian nature that greatly pleased me, and I could so firmly rely on his fidelity and sagacity; but he had conceived a

great aversion to the capital, since he had been taken ill there: besides, he had obtained a small sum of money, and his delight was to live at his ease while it lasted, and again to return to the woods. He appeared the next day after our arrival, in a gay suit of bright-coloured cotton; and even if he were not disinclined to come, I could not take him from his enjoyment.

Before I finally left S. José, I proceeded to visit some caverns about four miles from the town. They were formed in a ridge of limestone rocks, issuing from the mato, and consisted of several large and tortuous excavations, by which we entered at one side and issued at the other. The roof was covered with pendant cones; some we found were stalactites, and some the nests of moribundos, or hornets, which hung down in long sacks, each being a populous city swarming with dangerous inhabitants. It appeared in many places as if supported by pillars; they were formed of stalagmite, which, commencing in a drip from the roof, had formed columns, whose base rested on the floor; they were of a very pure carbonate of lime, and so numerous that they gave the caverns in many directions, the appearance of Gothic aisles. The ramifications opened into wild glades, and wherever we issued we found ourselves in

some solitary and sequestered recess of the most romantic character. In these places were the remnants of fire left by fugitive slaves, who make them their retreat when they fly to the woods round S. José; and nothing seemed better adapted for the retreat of a banditti, but it did not appear that it had ever been made their haunt.

The appearance of the place deters the timid from approaching it, and the negro who attended us with a torch-light, stopped at the mouth of one of the caverns, and could not be induced to follow us. When we pressed him for a reason, he said, "It was a place made by God, and not by man; and as he did not know for what purpose, he did not think it right to enter it." This veneration for caverns is universal, I believe, among men in a state of nature.

Lime-stone is as valuable as it is rare in Brazil, and in the province of Rio de Janeiro they are compelled to use shells as a substitute; they have the finest granite in the world for building, but no lime to cement it. It does not appear that any use this rock to fertilize the land about S. José, but in process of time it may be a most valuable acquisition. Hitherto they have tried but little manure, except the ashes of burnt wood, when the trees have been cleared by fire.

One enterprising man had used stable manure, and his plantation was in a most flourishing state: he bought it, he said, for 600 milreis; the coffee trees were all cankered, and would yield nothing, but an acquaintance from England advised him to try the sweepings of his stable, and by the magic, as he called it, of esterco de cavallo, his whole plantation was endued with a new principle of vegetable life; and he would not dispose of it for as many contos as he had paid milreis for the purchase.

On Saturday, the 10th of January, I set out on my return to Rio by a route different from that which I had gone, and this was through Barbacena and the Estrada d'Estrella. I took with me as a guide, Ricardo, a free black, who led a mule laden with my portmanteau and a large box full of specimens of the different mines I had visited, and I took leave of my very kind friends at S. José. Mr. Milward accompanied me for a few miles; and when he departed I found myself in the wide campos, ten days' journey from Rio, with no companion but a poor despised negro, with whom I could hold but imperfect communication; and having a wild country to travel over in that unprotected state, of which I had heard the most lawless character. When therefore I looked

round on the extensive solitude, where I seemed altogether alone, I confess a sense of something dismal, and a feeling of desolation came over me, as that of a stranger in the deserts of an unknown land, through which he was doubtful whether he could make his way, over the almost interminable plains and impenetrable woods that lay before him. In a short time, however, this feeling wore off, and I began to enjoy that unfading and exhaustless pleasure, which the face of nature always gives when presented under new and varying aspects.

The campos had even improved in their lovely appearance; the coarse low grass had shot up into long culmes of fructification; the common wild* oat grew with such luxuriance, that it ascended considerably higher than my head on horseback, and Ricardo and the mule were completely buried in it; the chelone† hung its arched head of pendant bells, as thick as foxglove in our highlands; and various species of begonia which ornament our conservatories, covered the ground. We passed the chapel of Padre Achepe, situated on the summit of a hill, and surrounded with lofty palms; the country about had an improved and pastoral appearance,

* Avena sterilis. † Chelone barbata.

and a greater number of horses and cows grazing on the downs, than we had yet seen together. From hence we descended into a valley; at the bottom of which, on the banks of a stream, is situated the arrayal of Pinto, twelve miles from S. José. The houses were enclosed by gardens, among which were orchards of peach trees. "A boy came up to know if I would purchase some; and he produced several that he had under his arm-pits, as I suppose to ripen, but I begged to decline his offer. Towards evening we crossed the stream of the Widasmaoth, about thirty yards wide, and arrived at the fazenda of Barroza, when it was nearly dark, and, as usual, under torrents of rain.

This was kept by a mulatto woman surprisingly fat, the wrinkles of flesh on the upper part of her arms hanging down in folds over her elbows; and the rotundity of her whole person such, that I think in England there never was exhibited for a show, a more corpulent figure. The large area before the door was a spacious swine yard, and this was one of the farms round S. José, where an immense number of pigs formed the whole stock. These animals were so ravenous, that they attacked the horse and mule while eating their milho, which they

devoured before Ricardo and I, with sticks and stones, could compel them to desist. Used as I had been to the discomfort of Brazilian travelling, this place was new in its offensiveness. It had all the accessories of a large stye: the dirt and strong odour of the pigs, their incessant screaming and grunting, the rude and scowling looks of some of the mulatto family within, and their uncleanly habits, rendered it the most comfortless place I had yet been in; and the feeling that I was here alone, and for the first time without a companion, added not a little to its dreariness.

It thundered, lightened, and rained in torrents; the pigs screamed, the dogs howled, and the mulattoes scolded all night, and so effectually murdered sleep, that I lay awake till a welcome gleam of the sky announced that I might depart. My corpulent landlady, however, was not such a churl as I had supposed, from her manners and occupation. She had ready for me a smoking dish of fat pork and rice, and was quite surprised and disappointed, when she found I could not eat it. Ricardo, however, had a better appetite, and despatched it to her satisfaction; and when I was taking my leave, the good-natured old lady put her hand toward me and blessed me.

About eight miles from hence, we arrived at the solitary fazenda of Cangayera. This was kept by a senhora of whom Ricardo spoke highly. She had lived at Barbacena, and so had received a town education; she was hospitable, and would give a stranger his breakfast. The farm-house was situated in a pretty pastoral lawn, skirted by a wood, and looked very pleasant after the dismal place I had left; so I entered it and asked if I might have refreshment. The lady herself appeared. She was young, fat, and comely; wore neither shoes nor stockings, but was clad in a gown of snow-white muslin, with a gold chain, and large ear-rings. Her manners were lady-like and cordial, but very modest and proper. She spread a cloth for me in her porch, and produced farinha, milk, and fresh eggs; and as I had coffee and sugar, I made a luxuriant meal.

In about half an hour we arrived at the river Cangayera, from whence the fazenda takes its name. This was deep and rapid, and without a bridge. Here we found the whole way obstructed by six teams, each drawn by ten oxen, and laden with large planks of jacaranda wood. On the leading team was the young senhora, to whom they belonged; she was dressed in a flesh-coloured pelisse, with a very broad white beaver

hat, banded with black crape; she sat astride on one of the planks, as if she was on horseback, and was a figure altogether as strange, as the carriage in which she rode. The management of these immense unwieldy teams was very dexterous. They had to descend a steep hill into the river, and ascend another as steep when they passed over, and this with a very heavy weight, and through deep and almost impassable mud. They proceeded, one at a time, down the bank into the stream, where they remained for a short time standing, with nothing but their heads out of the water. When they had rested awhile, they were then urged up the other side with shouts, goads, and lashes, and when the driver saw any one lagging, he forced him on with great judgment and dexterity. In this way the whole passed over a strong current, with steep muddy banks, apparently impassable for such machines. We were obliged to stand by in a copse till it came to our turn. The first step into the water was up to the saddle, and we swam and splashed through at the hazard of being carried off by a deep and rapid stream, as frequently happens here. For near an hour after we heard the creaking sound of the carts, before it died away in the distant mato.

From hence we entered some of the most

expanded campos we had yet seen, where we gradually ascended till we gained the summit of an elevated plain, from whence the prospect was most magnificent; to the west was the serra of S. José, distant about thirty-five miles, and, as distinct as if we were just at its base; to the north-east was the serra of Santa Rita, distant about fifty miles, like the ridge of a vast hay-stack on the horizon; to the north was the serra of Ouro Preto, distant sixty miles, with the singular protuberance of Ita Columni, quite discernible in the clear atmosphere, though at that great distance. The whole space circumscribed between those ridges, was an expanded undulating plain of various elevations, forming, under the clear light, a very joyous prospect of a lovely country. Here we met those birds called boraloo, a species of kite of a brown colour, but the hooked beaks and claws, with the feathers of the tails and wings, of a bright yellow. They are always found in pairs, and are so tame and inapprehensive of danger, that I almost rode over one before it moved out of my way. In this region also, we saw a species of grouse highly esteemed in Brazil; the birds are salted and sent to Rio, where they are considered a great luxury.

Descending from our elevation we arrived,

at eleven o'clock, at the town of Barbacena, from which the nobleman so well known lately in England takes his title. It stands on the slope of a hill, totally denuded of trees, and has that naked and unsheltered aspect which most of the towns present. It is not built in a very compact manner. It has two broad streets meeting each other at right angles, and the houses elsewhere are scattered about at random. The appearance of the place, however, is respectable, and is one of the few in the interior that has in its aspect the air and look of a town. It contains about 300 whitewashed houses, with a large matriz, which caused it to be originally called Igrega Nova, or new church. It has besides, three other chapels. By an alvará of the 24th of February, the title of villa, or city, was conferred upon it, and it was denominated "nobre e muito leal"—noble and very loyal; for its decided spirit exerted against the enemies of Brazil. In this district are several olive plantations, and the people raise large herds of cattle, and exercise other branches of industry.

But the circumstance which gave it most importance was, that it was on the high road leading from the capital to the Minas Geraes, and the point whence those to S. João de'l Rey and Villa Rica branch off; so that it was the

centre of communication, between the most important parts of the province, through which salt, and goods of foreign and domestic manufacture were conveyed. Since the new and more direct road, however, has been completed through Rio Preto, the crowd of passengers has taken that direction, and the consequence of Barbacena has declined. S. João has some enterprising merchants, who have drawn all the internal commerce from this place, and with the exception of some trade in domestic cotton and cattle, it does little else.

The first Englishman, I believe, who had ever penetrated as far as this town, was Mr. Mawe, in the year 1809, and he was an object of no small curiosity to the people. Their shops were even then stocked with English goods, but they had never seen before any of the people who manufactured them, and they crowded round him as a very extraordinary sight. This curiosity has not yet entirely subsided, for the people all ran to their doors to gaze at me as I passed by. It was Sunday, and though they were dressed in their best, they were not idle; several women had their distaffs twirling in their hands, preparing thread for the domestic manufacture of cotton carried on here, and I saw a negress engaged at a loom. Being very thirsty,

I stopped at a venda to purchase some oranges. There was but one to be had, which a respectable woman had just bought. I was turning away, but she immediately brought it out to me to the horse's side, pressed it kindly on me, in a manner that I could not refuse, and would accept no payment for it. These instances of good nature and kindly feeling to a stranger, I constantly met with, and often in things not so trifling.

As the day was yet young, I wished to proceed further, and since we had now got into the great road of the Estrada d'Estrella, we expected to find ranchos, with places of accommodation at the end of every mile. From S. José to Barbacena, a distance of nine leagues, or thirty-six miles, we had met with but one, and that exceedingly miserable; but for the first half league on this route we found two or three which seemed respectable. As we descended a hill, we saw at some distance before us, in a smiling valley, a number of white houses, which looked very cheerful and inviting, and here I proposed to rest. This was called Registo, because formerly the registry for the examination of all persons going to, or returning from the Minas Geraes, was established in this place, and I was informed that I must here submit to it. On inquiring,

however, for the office, I found that the registry had been removed to a place nearer the frontiers of Rio de Janeiro, and that it was now held at Mathias Barbosa, many leagues further on. The village of Registo, however, still retains its appellation, and the Rio das Mortes, which runs by it, is called here Rio do Registo Velho.

I found here a venda with quartos and camas, which had been fitted up when the registry was established here, but had since fallen into a state of sad decay. My host was a mulatto, with an exceedingly bad countenance. His help-mate was a lame negress, corpulent and filthy, with one leg shorter than the other; and the occupant of the room next to mine, was the most ill-looking fellow I had seen in the country. He was dressed in shabby finery, like a decayed gambler in gold; and he had an oblique eye, and a sinister cast of countenance, that a physiognomist would immediately set down to indicate the presence of all the bad passions that could be found in the moral composition of a man. He was very inquisitive to know from Ricardo who I was, and where I was going; and having heard I was an Englishman from the mines, he lifted the box of minerals, looked mysterious, and said he supposed it was full of gold, and then held

communication, in whispers, with a companion in the same room with him, as ill-looking as himself.

It thundered and lightened, with a deluge of rain, all night, but the next morning was clear and bright, so I had the cattle at the door at sun-rise, and was not ill-pleased to leave a place, where I thought myself associated with not very eligible company. When I prepared to mount my horse, he was dead-lame, and could not put his fore-foot to the ground. He was perfectly well the evening before, and it appeared as if some person had maimed him in the course of the night. Here, then, was an exceedingly embarrassing situation; there was not one to be bought or hired in the neighbourhood, and I could neither go on nor return: so in this dilemma I dismissed Ricardo back to S. José, to apprise my friends there, of the state in which I was. When I first found myself on the broad campos, with no one but him for a companion, I thought myself exceedingly desolate in the wilderness; but when he also left me, and I found myself alone, a total stranger, ten days' journey from Rio, detained in a place where I neither knew the people, the language, nor the country, I felt myself as solitary, and as incapable of moving from where I was, as if I had been shut up in a dismal cell in the strongest

prison in England; and I learned to appreciate how much the company, even of a poor despised negro, can sometimes contribute to our social feelings and comforts.

My two ill-looking neighbours had disappeared in the morning, and their places were supplied by two naked little black pickaninnies, the children of my host and hostess. These creatures had got bits of bamboo, which they formed into rude carts, loaded with wood; and their amusement was driving these carts, and imitating the creaking of the wheels, which they did with the most annoying accuracy, as loud and as shrill, and so persevering, that the urchins were never absent, either from my door or my window. The employment of the mother was scraping up manure before the door with her fingers, and she brought me my dinner of rancid pork, in a broken dish, without washing her hands. The thunder and lightning again began, and the rain came in torrents through the cracked roof, and down the ragged walls of the miserable hovel in which I was obliged to shut myself up, and so passed the first day of my confinement, one of the most dismal and dreary which I ever remember to have spent.

On inquiry, I learned the vigario Manoel la Droz da Costa lived on the opposite hill;

so next day I paid him a visit. He was the proprietor of the whole fazenda in which the village was situated, and his house had been the former registry. I found three men attending at the door, and when I inquired for the padre, they told me he was taking his sesta, so I sat down in the hall till he awoke. He was then informed that I wished to see him, and he came forth. He was tall and thin, seemed very old, and was dressed in a short jacket and black cap. He received me with a suspicious and repulsive look, and did not seem disposed to hold any communication with a stranger. I asked him if he spoke French or Latin, and he said both. I then explained to him who I was, and how I was circumstanced, and the old man gradually relaxed, and became very kind. We stood at first in the hall, but he now asked me into his library, showed me his books, of which he had a good collection, and then introduced me to his saloon, placed me on his sofa, and ordered coffee. It was accompanied by other refreshments, and among them were small loaves of excellent wheaten bread, called pao de trigo; and I found that wheat was cultivated with great success on the fazenda of the vigario, and to some extent in other places in the district.

His house was spacious, elegant, and well-furnished, and corresponded with what I had heard and seen, that the domestic establishments of the parochial clergy are generally the best in Brazil. He had in his hall a large English clock, whose striking regulated the motions of all the village; and his walls were hung round with maps and pictures. He himself seemed an intelligent man, and showed me sundry French books, of which he pointed out and read some passages, and he spoke Latin fluently and correctly. After a little time, he invited me to play cards, but I declined, and he then called in the persons I had seen waiting in the hall, who it appeared had come for the purpose, and a party was made up. They played at ombre. At the commencement, the vigario occasionally conversed with me, but in a short time the party got so deeply interested in the game, that they could think of nothing else. They got earnest, noisy, and disposed to be quarrelsome, and displayed, in a remarkable manner, that gaming propensity for which the Brazilians are noted; and this, I understood, was the amusement of the house every day at the same hour. I now requested he would inform me when any tropero with mules passed on their way to Rio, and I would join

them, and proceed even on foot in their company. He promised to do so, and I took my leave.

The next day a party of people came by, forming a very characteristic procession. In front was a curtained sedan, carried on poles between two mules. Inside, was a veiled lady and a child. Next followed a tall thin stately cavalleiro, with a large round Spanish hat, turned up before, and ornamented with a plume of feathers, short mantled cloak, trimmed with gold, large puffed breeches, with pink silk lining appearing through the slashes, yellow boots, and enormous silver spurs; he was attended by two others, dressed nearly in the same antique fashion; then followed huntsmen with poles, holding greyhounds in leashes; and behind, a train of other domestics. The whole exactly resembled the pictures one sees in the early editions of Don Quixote, or Gil Blas, and was one of the many instances I had remarked, where old manners and costumes were preserved in the mountains of Brazil, as they were originally brought over by the early settlers, long after they had passed away in the mother-country. This was, I found, a baptismal procession; they repaired to the house of the vigario to have the ceremony performed.

The fourth day had now arrived of my detention in this dismal place, and I saw no probability of being able to leave it. My horse continued still lame, and as I had heard nothing from my friends at S. José, I thought that some accident might have happened to my negro, or that he had disappeared in the woods for some dishonest purpose—a thing not uncommon on such occasions. While I was indulging in those unpleasant reflections, on a hill, to which I had climbed to look out, like sister Ann, to watch if any relief was coming, I saw two horsemen hastily descending the opposite slope, and to my infinite satisfaction, perceived them to be my good friend, Mr. Milward, accompanied by Mr. Reye, the secretary of the company, and followed by Ricardo, with a fresh horse. Immediately on the receipt of my letter, with prompt good will, they set out themselves to extricate me from my embarrassments. Some nails were drawn from the shoes of my horse, so that he could walk, and in an hour more I was again on my way, and took leave, for the last time, of my good friends, to whose unaffected kindness, and unremitting attention, I am greatly indebted.

My road lay across a bridge, and along the banks of the Rio das Mortes on the other side,

through a well-cultivated country; and at the distance of four miles, we arrived at Borda do Campo. This is a poor village of a few houses, with all the land about it, however, under tillage; and it has derived its name from the circumstance of its standing on the edge of the vast campos, which begin at this spot. Here then we left the plains and rocky ridges over which I had been travelling for thirty-one days, and again penetrated into the mato, or tangled thicket of woods and mountains, from which we were not again to emerge, till near the end of our journey. The road was beautiful and pastoral, like some of the lanes leading through copses in England; and in the evening we arrived at Confisco, where we proposed to stop for the night, as the rain, with its usual accompaniments, had set in very violently.

This place, which is a solitary mansion in the wilderness, consisted of a long edifice, having a venda, with a quarto attached, and at some distance a large rancho. It is situated on a small plain, under the ridge of a wooded hill, with a grass lawn, skirted with thicket in front, and a clear broad stream, tumbling over a pebbled bed, bounding it on one side. The house, which was neatly kept, had a broad portico, supported on rustic pillars; and the whole, though wild and

solitary, was exceedingly romantic and pretty. My host was a white Brazilian, more pleasing in his aspect and manners than most others I had met with. He showed me into a comfortable quarto, newly plastered with white clay, with beds and mats of green bamboo, which were fresh and fragrant, and formed a strong contrast with the mouldering filth I had left. When supper was ready, he took me kindly and courteously by the hand, to an apartment where it was laid out on a clean cloth, and well and neatly dressed, a stewed fowl with pão de trigo, accompanied by green vegetables—a species of brassica which he cultivated.

When I had finished, he invited me to his porch, where he brought me some excellent coffee, and set a mulatto of his establishment on an opposite bench, to play on the guitar for my amusement. He then called forth and introduced me to his whole family. This consisted of two mothers, a black and a white, and twelve children, of all sizes, sexes, and colours; some with woolly hair and dusky faces, some with sallow skins and long black tresses. In a short time, they made up a ball, and began to dance. It was opened by the youngest, Luzia, a child about four years old, with dark eyes, and coal-black hair. She was presently joined by a

little black sister, and they commenced with a movement, resembling a Spanish bollero, imitating admirably well the castanets with their fingers and thumbs. The movement of the dance was not very delicate; and the children, when they began, showed a certain timidity and innate consciousness that they were exhibiting before a stranger, what was not proper; but by degrees they were joined in succession by all the children, boys and girls, up to the age of seventeen and eighteen, and finally by the two mothers of the progeny. I never saw such a scene. It was realizing what I had heard of the state of families in the midst of woods, shut out from intercourse with all other society, and forming promiscuous connexions with one another, as if they were in an early age of the world, and had no other human beings to attach themselves to. I had personally known some, and I had heard of others, brothers and sisters, who without scruple or sense of shame, lived together, supporting in other respects the decencies of life; but here it was carried beyond what I could have supposed possible, and this precocious family displayed among themselves dances, resembling what we have heard of the Otaheitan Timordee. I soon retired, but the sound of the guitar continued a long time after.

My host had been rather inquisitive about my box of gold; and I found that here a rumour had gone before me, that an Englishman was returning from the mines with a rich treasure. As such a thing had been often the cause of robbery and murder in this country, I began to feel not quite at ease, travelling through these wild and solitary places, so utterly unprotected, and carrying with me such an incentive to human cupidity. I fell asleep thinking of this, and was suddenly awoke by the loud barking of dogs, and presently after by the trampling of horses' feet. The troop surrounded the house, and seemed to be holding outside a parley in whispers. As travellers never ride at night in this country except on unlawful designs, and as I had seen my host was a man, not restrained in his family by very moral ties, I thought it highly probable that these were some of his associates coming to dispose of my supposed treasure, and I made up my mind accordingly. A touch of a foot would pass through the wall or the door, and I expected every moment to have it applied. After waiting, however, some time without, they again set forward; and I need not tell you the dying tramp of their horses' feet at a distance, was not the least agreeable sound I ever heard. The next morning, I interrogated my

host on the subject of his nocturnal visitors; he was mysterious in his answers, but intimated that he supposed they were "não gente do bem." The Brazilians of his class are remarkable for protecting those who are under their roof; and it is not impossible that I was indebted to this immoral man, for some act of kindness in this way.

I set out at six, my host taking leave of me in a very cordial manner, and giving me directions about the road. We had once more entered the serra of Mantiquiera; and our way lay through mato, and wound along by low eminences covered with shrubs, rising behind into high hills clothed with forests. In a very few places marks of cultivation were seen on the sides, but in general the aspect of the country was unreclaimed wood. Two circumstances in the vegetation struck me: large patches of our common fern* exclusively covering whole acres, like similar spots in England, and brambles hanging every where over the road bearing blackberries. It was a species of rubus,† with plicated leaves, and a much more elegant plant than our English one; but I plucked and ate the blackberries as I rode

* Filix mas. † Rubus occidentalis.

along, as I would have done in our green lanes, which indeed our present road much resembled. This circumstance, combined with cabbages and other European vegetables flourishing in the gardens, was a strong proof of the similarity of the soil and climate, and a presumption that the produce of one, would be readily naturalized in the other. We passed Batalha and several other ranchos, and arrived at Mantiquiera about mid-day. As the great serra that divides the country for so many hundred leagues derives its name from this place, I expected to find it a large town. It consisted of three edifices in a flat sandy bottom; the houses as squalid and decayed as the ground was sterile and neglected. We inquired for milho for our horses and coffee for ourselves, but could get neither. We were informed there was plenty of both in the venda, but the key was in the dona's pocket, and the dona was visiting at a house beyond a bridge, so we were obliged to proceed further.

About a league distant we arrived at Pinho Novo, situated also in a muddy flat, equally uncultivated; and we found a venda in the middle of a swamp, through which we waded, nearly up to the horse-girths in mud, and obtained some refreshment. From hence we

passed the same mato, with as little signs of cultivation, as in that part of the serra where the new line has been opened. It seemed extraordinary, that though this road had been frequented for near a century, cultivation should be as little advanced as on the new line, and it still passes through perfect deserts. In a very solitary place, ascending a hill, were eight or ten negroes sitting on the ground eating feijão, round a large gamella; they were repairing the road, and were the first persons I had seen so employed. Instead of digging trenches on one side or the other, as courses to carry off the water, they laid down large trees obliquely across the way, facing them up with clay, to make channels to conduct it from one side to the other, so that a current was led in a zigzag direction along the road; and our horses had every hundred yards to climb over a beam of timber.

Notwithstanding the general solitude and wild state of the country, every quarter of a league we met a large rancho in a valley, and generally crowded with troperos' mules. In this way we passed Pinho Velho, Bernardo, and others, all equally distant from each other, and in several valleys, the road being a continued succession of hills. The last place was

striking. It was a large establishment in a wide hollow, with sloping grass swards rising up the sides of the mountains, yielding very extensive pasture. On the hill opposite the rancho was a magnificent bombax in blossom. It was of immense size, and, with its tall and straight stem bristling with broad flat spines, its large palmate foliage; and bright ruddy flowers resembling rich tulips, it was perhaps in that state one of the most beautiful trees in the world. The flowers are succeeded by immense pods as large as human heads, which burst and display long silken fibres like hair, to envelope the seed. This is used to stuff pillows, and for other domestic purposes.

In the evening we arrived at Pedro Alves, a town containing about fifty houses, in a rich verdant vale filled with gardens. It had a very rural appearance. The white houses were scattered through the green sward, interspersed with trees, giving a feature to the village very uncommon in a Brazilian landscape. They burn and cut down every thing in clearing ground; but if a tree accidentally escape, they prize it highly, both for ornament and shade, and use it as a grateful refreshment. In this pretty village a number had been spared, and added greatly to its appearance. The rancho was a

respectable estalagem, and I found in the sleeping-room a canopy bed, the only one I had seen in Brazil, in the house of a native. The garden of the house was filled with the productions of both hemispheres, and all climates. Bananas and apple trees, walnuts and calabashes, were growing luxuriantly side by side; vines and peach trees were loaded with fruit; and the latter so abundantly, that the branches were broken to the ground by their weight. Under this luxuriancy of fruit above, were plots of European vegetables below; large flat Dutch cabbages, and different kinds of lettuces, were flourishing among melons and pine-apples; and the whole presented a most grateful picture. Among the trees was a cactus, with stems as thick as a man's thigh, and ascending to the height of thirty feet, deeply ribbed, and from the furrows burst an immense profusion of blossoms.

My supper was served in an open gallery, which overlooked the vale, now rendered still more lovely by sloping beams of the setting sun; and here, perfumed and shaded with Brazilian roses, and the beautiful and splendid flowers of the large cactus, whose snowy petals began to expand at sun-set, as if for my gratification, I passed some of those hours, which it is a pleasure to recal when every thing that was grateful

to the senses, and agreeable to the fancy, fills up the memory. Among my companions was a monkey, from a neighbouring wood, who amused me greatly by his drollery and familiarity. He seized upon some fruit left to dry, which he devoured with avidity; and I found among them large seeds of the castor-oil tree, the oil of which is here used for lamps. Knowing the violent effects of them on human constitutions, I expected poor jacko would suffer severely for touching them. But a quantity that would have strongly affected a man, seemed to have been inert on him, and I left him the next morning as brisk as ever. I brought with me some of the unopened buds of the cactus, and laid some in water, and some dry on the table in my room. I found at midnight that they had all expanded, and lay like small basins of white china, which they resembled in size and colour, so that the nocturnal blowing is common to all the genus, and not confined to the night-blowing cereus. I was up at five, before sun-rise, and all those on the tree were in full beauty. Before our departure, at seven o'clock, the sun had risen, and they were all drooping and withered.

Soon after leaving Pedro Alves, we passed the venda of Dona Delphina, a lady whose

rank and accomplishments, we had heard, attracted many passengers to her house. We also passed the rancho of Luiz Pereira, where a comely and corpulent mulatto woman made for us some excellent coffee, with great good will. The women of her colour and class I found very hospitable, and kindly disposed to procure for strangers any refreshment in their power. We next arrived at the Engenho do Mato, a large sugar plantation and works; and soon after we wandered from the road, and were not aware of it till we found ourselves entangled in a dense wood. I frequently asked Ricardo if he were right, and he always answered "certo." In this way, holding both ends of his stick across his shoulder, with his face turned up to the sky, he pushed on through the forest with the greatest unconcern. Though it might be a matter of indifference to him to sleep under a tree all night in a deluge of rain, it was not so to me; and as the shades of evening were closing, I began to be uneasy, and insisted on turning back, and endeavouring to gain the road we had lost. It was well we did so: with considerable difficulty we found the right path, which commanded an elevated view. When I looked back, and saw the apparently interminable wood from which we had emerged,

expanding as far as the eye could reach to the horizon, I thought it very possible, if we had been entangled in it, that we should not again have appeared—a fate which has happened to many. Indeed, if a traveller by any chance found himself in the centre of the mass of trees now stretched before us, I do not know how he could extricate himself. The deep glens and ravines with which the forests are always intersected, and the luxuriance of vegetation by which they are matted, present impenetrable barriers to proceeding in any direction, except that through which a way had been previously cut.

We arrived late in the evening at the solitary rancho of Antonio Perreira, who had once been a very opulent man, and his establishment very respectable; but it was now so decayed that it could not afford us a bed, so we were compelled to push on further.

I had now left the elevated regions forming a vast ridge from whence the rivers, taking their rise, flow in opposite directions. The streams we had hitherto forded ran generally west, and fell into some ramification of the Uruguay, or Rio de la Plata: we now began to pass those which ran east, forming the various branches of the Parahiba. One of these was called the

Parahibuna, and our way lay nearly parallel to its course, frequently meeting its broad romantic stream at its angles, when it met the road. Into this river fall many smaller ones, which, crossing our line of march, we had every league to ride over. We now arrived at one called the Caxoeira, which was extremely curious and beautiful. It descended silently among the mato, which concealed its course, to a ledge of rocks which formed a natural bridge to the road. From this it suddenly burst out, just under our feet, with an immense body of water tumbling down a deep, wild, romantic wooded glen, by a fall extending for three or four hundred yards, and becoming one of the most curious and magnificent cataracts I had ever seen. I passed this rock-formed bridge when the shades of evening were closing in, and the mists were hanging on the mountains all about; the doubtful twilight above giving a mysterious cast to the roar of the wild waters, and the white foam indistinctly seen below. It was quite dark when we arrived at the bottom of the hill, and here, in a glen through which the river discharges itself, we found the fazenda of Dom Joaquim Vidal.

On one side was the fazendeiro's house, whitewashed, with a large farm-yard before it; on the

other was a large rancho full of troperos, and in the middle was a small cottage containing a venda and a confined cell behind it to lodge a traveller, where the dom disposed of the produce of his farm. When apprised of my arrival, he came down from his house. He was a large man, in his shirt and pantaloons, without coat or hat, though it was raining, and the drops running from his long bristly beard, which people of his class seldom shave above once a month. He too had heard of my gold, winked and talked in a suppressed voice about it, and wished me to dispose of some of it. I assured him I had no gold, but he looked incredulous and disappointed that I would not sell it. He sent me, however, a comfortable supper dressed in his own kitchen, on a tray, with a snow white napkin. I then retired to the little clay nook behind the venda, to which there was no window; but the matting and bamboo bed was green and fragrant, and I soon fell asleep with a sense of something fresh and wholesome about me.

The next morning we were overtaken on the road by a gigantic mulatto, I think the most athletic man I ever saw; he knew some people at S. José, and particularly my Indian guide, Patricio; and when he found he had attended me, he felt good will towards me for his sake.

We passed through Alcalde môr, with a large ragged rancho, and, at a short distance from it, we entered a circular valley of great extent. The trees on both sides had been burnt down, and their place supplied with a very beautiful crop of milho. It exhibited the appearance of a basin, with a regular edge on the horizon above, and on looking up we saw it skirted all round with tall trees, which formed a vast hedge to this magnificent field of corn. The object was so striking as to excite the apathy even of Ricardo, who turned about and observed, with a kind of feeling which I never saw him display before, "muito bonita"—very beautiful.

Towards mid-day we arrived at Juiz da Fora, and here it was necessary to have the horse and mule shod, but this is a matter of no small difficulty in Brazil. The shoe is a flat plate of iron, which projects considerably beyond the hoof, and it is made so broad to afford the beast a firmer footing on the soft roads; but in their present state it had quite a contrary effect. It gave no resistance to the pressure, for the animals sunk below their fetlocks at every step, and when they attempted to retract their feet, the projecting edge was caught in the viscid clay, and they generally left the shoes behind. In some places we met negroes with poles shod

with iron, who were delving in the pits left by the animals' tracks, and they ascertained when a shoe was at the bottom, by the clink of one iron against the other. They make a livelihood by the recovery of those lost shoes, and many of them were hung round with strings of them. Every tropero is a ferrador, or horse-shoer to his own troop; but if a traveller does not meet with one on the road, he rarely finds him established at a rancho. He often sees smiths and forges, but seldom any iron to work up, though it is often the material of which the rocks about here are composed. I had got my horses shod by a tropero the day before, but on examination we now found they had lost five shoes, which it was necessary to replace before we could proceed, and we stopped at the rancho for the purpose.

As usual, there was no ferradura to be had here, but my mulatto acquaintance bestirred himself; he rummaged out some old shoes, adapted them to the proper size, and clapped them on himself with great skill and despatch. When I proposed to pay him for his trouble, he would take nothing, but at parting requested to embrace me, and the man actually took me in his arms, when I felt like Gulliver in those of Glumdalclitch. There was no reason for his

civility and good will, but that I was a stranger and knew a person with whom he was also acquainted.

When my robust friend was gone, there rode up several men with slouched hats, black mustaches, and spurs on their naked heels, without shoes or stockings. They had all, besides, pistols and long guns on their saddles, which stuck out at each end from under their punchos. They eyed me very hard, and one little fellow, who looked like Spado in the Castle of Andalusia, when he thought I did not hear him, began to curse the English, and say, "they were robbing the country, and ought not to be suffered to take the gold out of it;" and, suiting the action to the word, he took hold of the suspected box with which Ricardo was now loading the mule. I thought he was really going to carry it off; but after remarking and admiring the weight of it, he helped it on the mule, and then, with a surly good humour wishing me a pleasant journey, he trotted off with his companions.

After leaving Juiz da Fora, we arrived in about an hour at the banks of the Parahibuna, which here makes an angle, and meets the road. It was a broad fine stream, flowing with a clear and rapid current, about forty yards wide. On the edge stood a rancho and venda,

where I stopped for refreshment. The house was kept by very respectable-looking people, particularly the females, who were comely and neatly dressed. While sitting in the venda, drinking my coffee, I took out a map on which I had traced my route, to mark the angle of the river in this place; they came round me, not with an obtrusive curiosity, but with a wish for information — perfectly comprehended the parts marked down, and pointed out to me some useful corrections. They had never seen a map before, but their interest was highly excited by it, and it afforded another, to many instances I had seen, of the natural capacity of the Brazilians, and their disposition for instruction.

From hence our way lay through a deep glen, where distant muttering announced the approach of rain in the midst of sun-shine, and in a short time the whole horizon became dark, and the war of elements began. Forked lightning descended from the clouds, in zigzag lines all around us, and visibly struck and splintered several trees on the opposite side of the valley. In one instance, a column of smoke followed the apparent stroke of the electric fluid, but the rain was descending in such a deluge, that the flame, I suppose, was extinguished. It is

the manner, however, in which woods are frequently set on fire. From hence we again fell in with the river, tumbling over ledges of granite, and forming a number of cascades, while it penetrated the bosom of a high and rugged serra, which stood before us. Just at the foot, and among the rocks, over the river, hung Marmelo, a very wild-looking village of negro huts, apparently inhabited only by blacks. The dark precipices of the mountain impending above, the river tumbling in cataracts below, the very rude huts, and their dusky inhabitants, afforded me the most striking picture of savage life I had yet seen in the country. From hence we climbed a very steep and savage serra, while the roar of the Parahibuna was heard below, winding its way through the clefts and chasms of its centre, and we arrived at the top with the storm still raging about us. Here it was almost dark, and we stumbled over an obstruction in the middle of the road. It was a new-made grave, stuck all over with little crosses, and intimated some violent or sudden death just before on that spot, but whether by lightning or robbers we could not tell. As it was, Ricardo's usual apathy was aroused to a degree of horror, — he turned from it with fright in his looks, and said to me in a

suppressed voice, "No ta bo, Senho, no ta bo;—It is no good, Sir, it is no good;" and he hastened from the ill-omened spot with all his speed.

We now descended to a very extended valley, and arrived at the fazenda of Madeiras, the most unpromising place, in the most inclement evening I had yet encountered in the country. It was a deep wide glen, flooded with sheets of water, in the midst of which stood a ragged rancho, of the most dismal and solitary aspect, and when I rode into it, I found the interior worse than it looked. The roof was broken in, and the rain had flooded the floor with pools. I asked an old diseased negro, who stood shivering in one of the dryest corners, where I could lodge? He said, "Aqui, Senho;—Here, Sir; there is no other place." I now looked round me in great dismay; to pass an inclement night in this ruin, without covering or refreshment, would, I concluded, be my death-warrant, and it was too late to attempt to penetrate farther into the mountains in search of another. In this dilemma, I saw at some distance a respectable-looking house, and on inquiry to whom it belonged, I was informed to the Dona Theresa. I at once made up my mind, and rode off to throw myself on her compassion.

After wading through thick and thin, across the muddy valley, I stood before the house, dropping like the Chelsea water-works. The lady herself appeared in the balcony above, and wished to know my business. I hastily collected all the Portuguese words I was master of, and made a speech from the top of my horse. I represented the tempest, the rain, the darkness, and the ruins, and finally requested shelter in her house. She looked alternately at the sky, at me, at the mountains, and at the rancho, and I saw they were powerful auxiliaries to my stammering eloquence. She pitied my desolate state, bowed her head, and motioned me up. I ascended by a flight of stone steps; but when I entered the balcony, the Dona had disappeared, and a negro was there, who showed me into a good apartment off the balcony, with a comfortable bed. Slaves immediately attended; one pulled off my drenched garments, another brought napkins, and a third a large gamella, with hot water and caxas, for a bath. When I had thus changed my wet clothes, I went forth to thank my kind hostess. She received my acknowledgments with courtesy and simplicity, and asked me what refreshment I wished for, and when I would take it; I left both to herself, and she retired.

I now found that she was the widow of a gentleman, who had been proprietor of the estate all round. He had died a few years before, leaving her with two little girls, her daughters, and twenty-four slaves, fourteen males and ten females. The former were located in huts up the sides of the hills, and the latter lodged with her in her house. With this large family of slaves, she lived alone in the mountains, having no white persons, but her little children, within several leagues of her. Yet such was the moral ascendancy she had acquired, that her whole establishment moved with perfect regularity, and cultivated an estate of several square miles. She was herself a lady of about thirty or more, rather corpulent, as most Brazilians are, at that age, with a genteel aquiline face. Her daughters were most engaging little creatures. I took one in each arm, and marched them up and down the balcony while supper was preparing. They leaned their olive faces on my shoulder, and fixed their large dark eyes, through the pent-house of their black thick hair, intently on my face, and they remained for a long time without uttering a sound, except a deep heavy sigh. The Dona passed us in her domestic affairs, and seemed gratified at a stranger thus noticing her children.

Supper was served in the balcony, and I was attended, like some man in the Arabian Nights, by six young female slaves, all dressed in white. As I was cold and chilly from the inclemency of the day, I wished to make some hot punch, and requested caxas and warm water for the purpose. On one of the jugs brought to me, was an inscription, and I was curious to see what fancy the Brazilians indulged in this respect; but I was rather surprised to read in English, "To all good fellows." The jug was Staffordshire-ware, which, like other British manufactures, was to be found in every part of the country, and the language was unintelligible to the Dona. I saw, however, the handmaids smiling about me, and endeavouring to suppress their laughter, so I thought they understood its meaning; but their tittering had another object, and that was the caxas the jug contained. I let them do as they pleased, and they all filled up a saucer with it, which had held some salt, and drank it off like water, though it was as strong almost, and as fiery as aqua-fortis. The eldest was not fifteen. The partiality of blacks for this ardent spirit is quite a rage. They begin to drink it as soon as they can get it. Whenever I have been asked for a vintem, it was always to purchase it, and the

same quantity does not seem to produce that degree of intoxication it would on a white.

Beside the gallery stood a large barn. About nine o'clock at night this was lighted up with a great blaze, and I saw and heard people at work. Curious to know their employment, I went to see. They were threshing milho; the heads were cut off, and laid on a wattled platform, and eight men, with poles, beat them in regular time. The seeds flew about with great force, and striking against a matted wall, fell back, passed through the wattles, and were collected in a heap below. The husks were then thrown on the fire, and caused the blaze which attracted me. When they had threshed enough for the ensuing week, they lighted a large fire before the barn door, and walking round it in procession, each took a lighted brand from it, and proceeded to his own hut. Whether this was a mere usage of the fazenda, or some ceremonial observance, I could not learn.

The next morning, I found I had actually occupied the Dona's own chamber; admitting a stranger was a circumstance so rare, that there was no other place for his accommodation. I really felt shocked and embarrassed at this, and knew not how I could make an adequate

return. I happened to have an English sovereign in my pocket, with the device of George and the dragon on one side, so I determined to drill a hole on the edge, and hang it round one of the children's necks, as a little keepsake, which would not look like giving money. While I was in the act of this operation, Ricardo came in and told me, that my bill for lodging and entertainment was three patacs and a cobre. It is astonishing how a little circumstance dissolves a dream of romance. I put up St. George and the dragon, with a feeling of deep disappointment, and discharged my bill, which was not more than if I had remained in the ragged rancho; but I would have paid ten times as much with pleasure, had I not been asked for it. At parting, I thanked my kind hostess, and was, I hope, duly grateful for her real hospitality, though the delusion of proud chateaux, stately dames, and wandering knights was completely destroyed. It was most unreasonable to expect such romance in a country like Brazil, where every fazenda has a rancho, and every proprietor is more or less an innkeeper.

We again ascended the mountains, and again I felt how much I was indebted to the Dona Theresa for the shelter she had afforded me. Nothing could be more desolate than the region

we had to pass through, and had we endeavoured to explore our way in a dark tempestuous night, we never could have found it. In an hour we were descending into a more level country, and crossed the Riberão, which runs over small ridges of granite, or gneis rocks, forming a kind of stone-ribbed road for some distance. From hence the river descends, in a succession of cataracts, till it falls into the Parahibuna. About mid-day we again fell in with the latter river, at Idhea, and were greatly gratified by the novel sight it presented. The broad stream here flows round a swelling peninsula, which rises into gentle hills from the banks of the river. These were all converted into immense coffee plantations, which ascended to the summits. Round the base was a rich belt of green-sward, on which large herds of black cattle were grazing; and between the plantations were rows of bananas, palms, and other native trees, in full bearing. On one side were the farm-houses forming a little town, and the river was passed over to it by a handsome bridge. The whole formed a grand and beautiful picture, of what this fine country can and will be made, when the people avail themselves of all its capabilities. This is far from being the case at present; I asked at a rancho for

the refreshment of a cup of coffee, as my own stock was exhausted, but there was not a grain to be had on one side of the river, while on the other was a plantation, seemingly capable of supplying all England.

We soon after arrived at the registry of Mathias Barbosa, where we expected to be examined. We found, however, that it was removed still farther on. The man who originally established it in the country, at Registo, had it afterwards transferred to this place, which he then called by his own name. The buildings form a large square, enclosing a quadrangular space inside. We approached it by a stone causeway, which led up to a gate, into which we entered, passed through the quadrangle, and out at a gate on the other side, without any questions being asked, though it was carefully guarded by soldiers. We found, on inquiry there, that the registry was now finally established on the river Parahiba, the boundary-line between the two provinces.

We could procure no refreshment at this place, and proceeded on to the village of Simão Pereira, where there is a chapel, and procured some coffee; and about four o'clock arrived at the romantic passage of the Parahibuna, which is singularly beautiful. At some leagues from hence

the river joins the Parahiba, and the peninsula caused by the union of the two streams, is formed of mountains of naked granite, which overhang the bed of the river, with immense projecting and perpendicular faces, and through this vast barrier of rock the large body of water tumbles away, till it joins its larger brother. The passage here also was once on a time the registry, till it was finally removed to the Parahiba; but the appearance is still kept up at this place. The river is crossed by a very beautiful bridge, thrown over from the rocks at each side, and supported by abutments springing from others in the middle of the stream, which is here about 200 yards wide. On the opposite bank is the former registry, still standing on an esplanade over the river, and behind it rises the bare perpendicular face of an immense granite mountain, with a skirting of forest trees on the highest ridge. The bridge, the registry, and some houses here, are all kept in the neatest repair; and the whole has the appearance of some of the prettiest villages in Wales or Devonshire, though the water and rocks are on a much grander scale. It was remarkable that there is no toll for passing this long and beautiful bridge, though I paid enormously at the ragged, tottering structures I had passed elsewhere.

At this pretty village there was no rancho, or any place of entertainment, and we had still to splash on in thunder, lightning, and rain, as usual, till we met with one. About half a league further we found the rancho of Ignacio, but no other accommodation of any kind. An open shed on such a night was a dismal prospect, and on looking about I saw a small hut opposite filled with people, who seemed to have taken shelter from the wet. One of them, a large burly man, with a straw hat projecting like a pent-house, and no shoes or stockings, sat with his long pole across the door, as if to bar it against the entrance of any other person. He told me in a rough manner that the rancho was the only place for me, unless I chose to go on two leagues further to another of the same kind. I asked him to admit me to the house; he replied it was as full as it could hold. "But," said he, "you may stand in it all night, if you please, for there is no room to lie down." I thought standing room better than none at all, in such weather, so I alighted and squeezed in. There were nine men in the small room, who were the father and his sons. I divested myself of my wet clothes in a corner, and then accommodated myself to my place and company; they were rough, but kind and cordial.

At supper a large heap of farinha was poured out from a bag on the cloth, and on the summit was laid a copious dish of smoking feijaõ; every one helped himself with his spoon from this heap, till the dish descended to the table; to season our beans and meal, a piece of roast pork was cut up and sent round by the man of the house, and the whole concluded with caxas grog. I never eat a more hearty supper, or was among kinder people. When all was removed, I was preparing to sleep by laying my head on the table, but I was touched on the shoulder and beckoned into an inner room, which I did not know of, and here I found a nice bed prepared for me; I afterwards learned it was that occupied by the man of the house, who gave it up to the stranger, though he was himself in a bad state of health. On departing in the morning I gave an English shilling to one of the sons as a keep-sake; he showed it to the rest with exultation, and they said he should keep it "por lembrança"—to remember me. So we all shook hands with great cordiality, and I parted from my humble, but very kind friends.

My way led over the steep and rugged serra of Entre Rios, which lay between the two rivers, and occupied nearly the whole interval.

We we were now approaching the Parahiba, the great thoroughfare of this country, and the population was proportionably increasing. At the end of every half mile we met ranchos filled with mules, and the commodities they were bearing. Some of these buildings, particularly Rossigno da Negra, formed large quadrangles, and the road passed through the square in the middle. The houses too were more numerous, scattered so thick as to deserve the name of villages; and from this populous and frequented country, we entered the town of Parahiba, on the banks of the river. This contains about eighty or a hundred houses, built in a very irregular manner. It was filled with the bustle and activity of mules arriving and departing, and the different retainers of the customs, who form a class of population more rude and offensive than any I had met in Brazil. The registry is finally established in this place, and I was to undergo a strict examination, and the supposed treasure of my heavy box displayed.

As people are subject to great annoyance here, Senhor Campos had given me a letter to the vigario, who was to direct me how to proceed. He, I found, was detained in the country at some distance by the floods, and I proceeded myself to the registry. I had no need of any

interference, the gentlemen in the office were remarkably polite. On reading my passport they took my word for the contents of my luggage, and on paying some trifling fees, without further inquiry or examination, I was conveyed to a large ferry-boat and passed to the other side. The river here is about 200 yards across, and preserves its rocky and obstructed character. The ferry-boat, which contained twenty or thirty horses and mules, with their loading, was poled through shallow water, nearly to the middle of the stream; it was a tedious process, and they talked of erecting a bridge similar to that across the Parahibuna.

When arrived at the other side, we hastened on to reach, while it was light, the rancho of La Cruz, kept by a man who, they told me, spoke English. The usual war of the elements, however, set in just after we left the river, and we found ourselves in the dark, floundering along under one of the most violent storms of thunder and rain we had get encountered. Ricardo became greatly alarmed; I found he had an irrepressible horror at being on the road at night in this place, both for natural and preternatural reasons, and after wandering from the path several times, as if he was bewildered, he took refuge in the first rancho we met,

and neither threats nor entreaties could induce him to go on further.

This was a large dreary place, like a stable, kept by a woman, who lived there with five or six negroes. She was young, and rather comely; but when I entered, evidently intoxicated. She had been, I learned, a person of indifferent character, at Rio; and had two illegitimate children. She rented this rancho, and took one of her negroes as her paramour and partner. Of all the women on record who have been no ornament to their sex, this, I believe, was one of the worst. After having emptied a bottle of caxas, to which, as I passed by her venda, I saw her head constantly applied, she issued forth with her face flushed, and a lash in her hand; the very personification of Tisiphoné. One of her slaves was a poor boy of twelve years old, and on this child she vented all her malignant passions. Every time she met him, she attacked him with her lash, cutting him across the face and body, till she left him bleeding and moaning; and this for no reason, but in the very wantonness of cruelty. Her house was like herself—most abominable—I could get no place to rest in, but a kind of stable among the negroes; and here, in the midst of filth, my supper

was served up. It consisted of rancid pork sausages and feijaõ. When the boy whom she had so cruelly treated, was laying it on the table, he trembled so that he spilled a small portion of the sauce. She seized him by the throat, dashed him down, and trampled on him. I now interfered for the poor child, and took him up to protect him. There lay on the board a pointed faca, one of the deadly weapons used for stabbing. She caught it up, and striking the end of it on the table, rushed forward with an intent to wound either me or the child, when I wrenched it from her hand. Knowing *quid furens fœmina posset,* and that she had several sturdy negroes at her command, I thought it right to be on my guard, and kept the little fellow by me on a mat; he moaned most piteously all night, crying out for mercy every moment in his sleep.

I was glad to leave this fury at the dawn of day, but sorry to leave the poor child behind me, who I have no doubt will fall a victim to her intoxicated rage. If there was no other argument against a state of slavery, the incentive it applies to the indulgence of our evil passions, would be sufficient to condemn it. If this wretched woman had not this poor victim to exercise her bad temper on, with impunity

on all occasions, she would learn to keep it under some control.

The name of this rancho was Governo, and it is on the estate of Senhor José Linhares, a constitutional Spaniard, who arrived at Rio, and married a Brazilian lady with a considerable property on the Parahiba. He had been indebted for acts of kindness to some of the British, and is very attentive to any of that nation whom he meets. Had I applied at his house, I should have been hospitably received, and spared a night of painful recollection.

We soon arrived at the English rancho, and found it was kept by a German of the name of Credé, who spoke English. He had come out as a miner, but found it a better speculation to keep an inn. He seemed thriving and prosperous. On our way we had met several very long snakes; one of them was so large that it lay across the road like a small cable, and we were compelled to rouse him out of our path by hurling stones at him from a distance, like the soldiers of Regulus on the banks of the river Bagrada; he coiled up his long folds and glided into the wood. Another was a beautiful cobra coral, which we killed, and I brought him along on a forked stick. Ricardo turned from him with horror; but one of the Germans here,

skinned and stuffed him for me without scruple.

After breakfasting with our German host, and receiving from him some useful directions, we proceeded on to Saboora, a small village with a chapel; and from thence to the large coffee plantation of Pamboola, affording another fine specimen of the capabilities of the country. From hence we passed a stream, where meeting a ledge of rocks, it tumbles over it, and forms several beautiful cascades. We stopped near this to feed our horses; and sitting on the steps of a door taking some memoranda, I attracted the notice of an elderly man who had been attending the horses. He came and sat down beside me. I asked him some questions as to the direction of the waters. He immediately took the pen, and on a bit of paper which I furnished him with, sketched a map of the country, with the names of several streams by which it was intersected. The river which forms the cascade was the Segretaria, which joined, at some distance before us, the Fagunda, and both fell together into the Piabunda; which last, meeting with the Parahiba and Parahibuna, form a grand junction, denominated Tres Barras, and resembling in this the Nore, the Suir, and the Barrow in

Ireland, mentioned by Spencer, and called the Three Sisters. I found my new friend very intelligent; he asked me various questions of other countries, and was as ready to give as to get information. Indeed, as far as my experience goes, such is the general character of this rising people. They esteem strangers who visit their country as persons of more extensive knowledge than themselves; and are well pleased to learn any thing from them, and tell them all they know in return. He was a common man, in a remote place, not superior to the hostler of an inn, anxious for knowledge, and capable of constructing a map of the surrounding country.

From hence we passed through a very lovely region, of a more cultivated and pastoral character than any I had yet seen in Brazil. Our road lay along the Piabunda, which we here for the first time fell in with. It was exceedingly romantic and pretty, resembling the Clyde near the falls at Lanark, but on a much larger scale. The road passed at a considerable height above it, and commanded an extended view of its windings and tumblings. We passed several neat and picturesque cottages and gardens; and in the evening we arrived at Semidouro, an arrayal of twenty or thirty houses, with a rancho and venda on each end. At the first

we could get no answer to our inquiries. The vendeiro had a card party in his shop, who occupied his counter; and he was so interested in the game he was playing, that we were told to go somewhere else, as he could not attend to us. We inquired at the second, and were informed that there was neither quarto nor cama; so we were directed to proceed on to Salta, the alfiera of the Senhor Louriano. This will give you some idea of the state of travelling in this country. We were now on a much frequented road, in a populous district, approaching the capital, and in a large village with two inns; and there was not a sleeping-room or bed in either, for a passenger. In fact, the state of seclusion in which the country was kept, and the strict inhibition laid upon strangers passing through it, had prevented all communication; and, consequently, no accommodation was thought of.

We arrived at Salta about sun-set; every thing about this place had an inviting look. A steep romantic rock hung over it, and the pretty river murmured below it. The habitation of the Senhor was a large well-built edifice, and a decent house opposite the rancho seemed intended for the reception of travellers; but I was told that here also there was no accom-

modation of any kind but the open shed, and that I must go a league or two farther on. It was now growing dark, and I felt quite exhausted, and indeed unable to proceed; so I determined once more to appeal to the hospitality of a native. Senhor Louriano was standing in his balcony, a mild, gentlemanly-looking man, about forty. His wife, I was told, had died a short time before, and he was living with his ten children, who were all about him. I made my case known to him, and requested he would procure me a lodging in the village. He said there was no such thing, and that his own house was so full that he could not accommodate me any where but in his gallery, to which I was welcome. I readily accepted the offer, and transferred my baggage there, and sat down on a bench. After some conversation, he said I seemed very tired and exhausted; and I confessed I was so. He then, with the kindest expression of countenance, took me by the hand, and led me to a neat bed-chamber, telling me it was mine while I remained. In due time supper was announced, and I was introduced by the worthy man to his large family, and became quite domesticated among them.

The next morning I discovered, that here

also the man of the house had given me up his own bed, and slept himself on a mat in a store-room full of peaches. He had prepared for me in the morning, the unusual luxury of tea for breakfast; after which, he called the younger branches of his family about him, including his blacks, and having instructed them in their prayers and duties, he dismissed them with a blessing. He then procured for me the company of a tropero, who was conveying for him cargoes of peaches to Rio; and I took leave of this very kind and good man, with feelings of great esteem and respect, which was all the remuneration I made him for his hospitality, for he would accept of no other.

I now for the first time travelled with muleteers; and even if I were disposed to sadness, their light and merry dispositions would disperse it. The morning was beautiful, brightening every feature of the lovely country through which we passed; and my mind was filled with the recollections of the kindness and good-will I had experienced, and a reciprocal feeling of them for all about me. Our way continued along the pretty banks of the Piabunda, which we were now ascending to its source in the Organ mountains; and at the end of two leagues we arrived at the fazenda of Padre Correa, long

celebrated for its coffee plantations. The house is a large, low edifice, standing on one side of a spacious green; and on the opposite ran the river, with a broad clear stream over a bed of pebbles. In the centre was an immense figueira, or Brazilian fig-tree, shadowing all around with its dark foliage. Under this I sat sheltered from the heat of the sun, and took the refreshment of some fine peaches, with which the senhor had directed the muleteers to supply me. In the windows of the house stood a lady with some children; I made them a low obeisance, which they courteously returned. I was informed it was the family of the emperor, whose daughter, the Princess Paula, had been sent here for the recovery of her health. She had been affected with a chronic inflammation of her liver; and after remaining a few months in this delightful and salubrious place, she returned to Rio perfectly restored. The emperor was hourly expected to visit his family.

We now came within sight of sundry granite pikes, that pierced the sky with their sharp points. We were approaching behind the Organ mountains, and began to see on the horizon the back of that ridge, whose front presents to Rio so curious an aspect. Fazendas were abundant on all sides, and the hedges were

generally the American aloe.* This magnificent plant, which I found in every part of the country, forms a circle of lanceolate leaves, sometimes eighteen feet in circumference; the leaves themselves being eight feet long, exceedingly strong and sharp. The flower-stem is two and a half feet in circumference at the base, and shoots up to the height of thirty feet; from this project innumerable horizontal footstalks, from whence hang myriads of campanulate blossoms, so that the form of this grand flower is that of a pine-tree, for which it might be mistaken. I saw in some places when I set out, this stem beginning to protrude itself from the midst of the leaves, and on my return it had attained the magnitude of a pine-tree of twenty years' growth. What an idea does this give of the vigour of vegetation in this country, where such a vast mass of beautifully organized vegetable matter could be formed in so short a time from one root! Its existence, however, is as short-lived as its growth is rapid: already had the succulent stem begun to decay at its base; and a strong wind had prostrated many of them across the road, the dimensions of which I measured. The stems lay rotting and

* Agave Americana.

useless, but the leaves yield a strong fibre, which is twisted into cordage.

At the distance of a league we arrived at Samambaya. Here, as I approached, I heard a distinct noise, which I thought proceeded from frogs; but it was from a manufacture of ferraduras, or horse-shoes, and I now could comprehend why the frogs were called ferradors. Several negroes stood at a bench, with the iron before them, which they struck with measured blows, and the metallic sound they emitted, exactly resembled the successive croaks of this curious species. A short way beyond this we arrived at the foot of the Organ mountains, and began to ascend by the celebrated Estrada d'Estrella. This is a broad paved road, extending for four miles, over a depression between two high peaks of the mountain. It is thirty feet wide, divided into three compartments by three parallel lines of narrow flags, running like bands the whole length of it, one through the centre and two at each side. From the road project small mounds of stone, so as to intercept the passage, and compel travellers to use the pavement only, which the muleteers would gladly evade if they could. We climbed, with some difficulty, up this disagreeable passage; the hoofs of the mules and horses clattering and

slipping the whole way over the rough and smooth stones, till we gained the highest ridge, and then a view suddenly burst upon me of surprising magnificence.

On both sides rose the granite pinnacles, tall and slender, like vast Turkish minarets, piercing the clouds. As these receded on each hand, they exposed to view the rich plain below, ornamented with villas, and extending to the edge of the bay. Here commenced that beautiful sheet of water, the nearer end studded with green islands, and the farther with ships of all nations; beyond was the town expanding to a great distance along the shore, interspersed with wooded hills, their sides dotted with villas, and their tops crowned with churches and convents. Beyond this was the Pão d'Assuear, the Corcovado, and other fantastic and singular-shaped mountains, that give the entrance of the bay so uncommon a character; and beyond all was the blue Atlantic, expanding into immeasurable space, till it was lost in the blue sky. But it is impossible for me to convey to you any adequate conception of this glorious sight, which far, far exceeded any thing I had ever seen before, or ever expect to see.

From hence I descended into the plain below, to the fazenda of Mandioca, and took up my

abode for the night at a rancho. This stood in a rich plain, with a number of large edifices scattered through it: it extended to the base of the Organ's pikes, which seemed to rise perpendicularly from it, and formed round it a bristling semicircle. The horizontal sunbeams, gleaming through the intervals, shone on the opposite spires with extraordinary varieties of light and shade; and when it had set, the tips of all of them seemed of burnished gold. One of them, at a distance, called the Cabeço de Frade, or the priest's head, from the spherical knob by which it is surmounted, was seen gleaming above, while all the rest of the pike was in shade; as I have sometimes observed the ball of St. Paul's glittering above the mist.

From hence to the Porto d'Estrella was about two leagues, where we arrived at mid-day. It is here that all persons who come by the Estrada embark for the capital; to which they go direct by water, a distance of thirty-six miles, instead of a very circuitous and tedious journey by land round the bay. Boats take advantage of the sea and land breezes, which periodically blow up and down the harbour, with unerring regularity; they therefore come up with the former in the morning, and go down with the latter in the evening. The

aldeâ of Porto d'Estrella is situated on the river Inhumerim, near its confluence with the Saracuruna, about four miles from the sea. It is a long, ragged-looking village, containing about two hundred houses, with a few good buildings and shops. The situation is swampy; the country all about being intersected with branches of other small rivers communicating with the Inhumerim, which winds its sluggish way through reedy banks of soft mud. At the extremity of the street, is a large armazen, or warehouse, where all the commodities about to be embarked are stored. This is situated on the edge of the muddy stream, and the rancid effluvia arising from decayed articles, combined with the putrid miasma exhaled from the stagnant waters, render it exceedingly offensive and unwholesome.

It was a curious and interesting sight, however, to watch the arrival of the troperos from the interior, with different articles to be embarked for Rio. From morning till evening, there was a continued and uninterrupted succession, of troops of loaded mules pouring into the town, and depositing their cargoes, consisting of milho, farinha, coffee, cotton, fruit, poultry, and other articles; and I do not know that I had ever seen a greater activity and

bustle of commerce, than this place displayed. Three large vessels of seventy or eighty tons burden were brought to the bank, in which all those commodities were embarked; in one of them, covered with a straw canopy, I took my place, with some other passengers, and about six o'clock we set sail. This river formerly abounded with alligators, which are now become scarce and timid; and we saw ducks and children swimming with impunity in the stream at the village. As we advanced, however, into the wider part, and among the more solitary swamps, we saw them moving the reeds, and heard them champing and blowing at the edge of the water. About midnight we disembarked at the mouth of the river, on a platform, and entered an aquatic tavern, where we supped on cold fried fish, vinegar, and capsicum, and again embarked.

In the morning we found ourselves in the middle of the bay, in a dead calm, so the patrono of the vessel dropped anchor. It was necessary to make a fire to prepare a repast for the black crew; and instead of using a flint and steel, which no one on board possessed, they practised the primitive Indian method of friction. One held a flat piece of wood, while another placed on it a pointed stick, which he

kept between the palms of his hands, then twirling it rapidly round, while the other pressed the board against the point, in a short time we perceived the smell of fire, then saw smoke, then a red glow at the twirling point of the stick, and, finally, the board burst into a flame. At length the sea breeze sprung up, of which we availed ourselves, passing obliquely through the channels of several beautiful islands; and arrived, after mid-day, at the Armazem do Sal, at Rio. Here I took a small boat, made out of the hollow trunk of a tree, and rowed by an Indian, who conveyed me to our mansion, at the other extremity of the city,

I had now travelled seven or eight hundred miles, through remote and little frequented parts of the country, and had been every day, for several weeks, mixing with different people of every class, so as to enable me to form some estimate of the inhabitants. I had been taught to believe that I should find them rough and rude in their manners, and strongly and unreasonably prejudiced against all strangers; so indolent, that they neglected all the advantages of their fine country, and so ignorant that they not only knew nothing themselves, but were utterly indifferent in searching for any source of information; of quick and irritable temper,

readily disposed to take and resent an offence, even by the assassination of the offender; of a churlish and inhospitable disposition, not inclined to admit others into their houses, and, though selfishly ready to receive, never known to return an invitation; so mercenary, that they would take all they could get, but would give nothing without more than an adequate return; so sensual, that they indulged their propensities in this way without much restraint from the laws of morality or religion, and every house a family brothel; so dishonest, that nothing was safe with a traveller, and the roads so insecure, and murders so frequent, that the fatal spots were marked at every hundred yards, where bodies have been found, and numerous others were never discovered, till their saddles were seen rising up in judgment, on the tops of trees, from the pits into which they were thrown. Such was the opinion I had been taught to entertain before I left England, which my experience of the people has enabled me to appreciate.

Though sometimes rough and unpolished, they are remarkably kind and good natured; and their former prejudice against strangers never renders them hostile, or even uncivil. On the contrary, stranger with them, seems a

sacred name, when he stands in need of their assistance. I was, in many places, without introduction or equipage, travel-worn, soiled and neglected in my person, and exceedingly unprepossessing, I imagine, in my appearance. Yet I was kindly received as an inmate into the houses of the only persons to whom I applied, and those in every rank of life:—a titled Dona, a Brazilian gentleman, and the humble keeper of a poor rancho, the occupier of a small room, all equally received me with cordial hospitality, and gave up their own necessary comforts for my accommodation.

If they are indolent, it has hitherto been for want of a proper stimulant, and the baneful and enervating effects of having all their labour performed, and their wants supplied, by slaves. Where a due incentive is applied, there are no people more active. Since the opening of the interior, and a free communication with other countries, new roads have been pushed into deserts, where human foot, except that of the savage, never trod; and plantations of food begun, where nothing but wood and bushes had before been since the creation. Indeed, the increasing intercourse on the roads, and the transportation of produce from place to place, is more active than I have seen it in any country, except

England. All the wild mountain-passes were covered with troperos, the ranchos never empty of their mules, and the bustle and activity of Porto d'Estrella, which continues every day, and all day long, such as I have only seen at crowded fairs or markets, which recur periodically in other countries.

If they are ignorant, it is not from any want of a desire for knowledge, or a disposition to learn. When the post arrives at S. José, or a similar place, the office is crowded with people, who come for their newspapers, and others who press forward eager to know what they contain; and every provincial town has now a newspaper of its own. In the serra of Lenheiros, they have established a respectable public library at S. João d'el Rey, with a literary society; and schools of primary instruction are opened, wherever there is a collection of houses to supply scholars, who are so eager to learn, that in some places, for want of books, they are instructed out of manuscripts; and along the roads, the humblest people were glad to receive, and ready to give, any useful information.

If they are a people of a quick or irritable temper, it is the constitutional fault of a tropical climate, and they seldom carry it to a fatal

excess. Duelling, that flagrant violation of the laws of God and man, so common among us, is never heard of in Brazil, and assassinations are more talked of than committed. It is a vulgar prejudice, that all crosses set up intimate murder. Of the hundreds we met, there were but two, as far as we could learn, that denoted it; and but one murder attended with robbery; the rest were land-marks, road-marks, pious-marks, or marks to indicate sudden death from accidental or natural causes; most of them now very old and rotten, and apparently the most recent of those we saw, was dated in the year 1810, affording a presumption that no accident of the kind it intimates, had occurred for twenty years.

If they are not inclined to invite people to their houses, it is not from a churlish disposition, but because their houses are not fitted up for, or they themselves in the habit of such intercourse. Their females are retiring and domestic, and our modes of company would break in on the whole economy of their establishment. They are, however, prompt and pleased in returning the obligation by any other courtesy or civility in their power. A mercenary people, I should suppose, they are not at all. Whenever I paid for any thing, the

demand was something exceedingly fair and moderate; and on some occasions, when I received money's worth, no remuneration would be accepted. The proprietor of a topaz mine suffered me to pick up his gems, and put them in my pocket; and the proprietor of a gold mine presented me with a paper of his precious metal, and positively declined any return.

If they indulge in illicit intercourse, we should recollect that one of the baneful effects of slavery, is to form such connexions; that a Brazilian residing by himself, insulated in a desert, and having none of the restraints which the opinions of society impose, to hinder him, readily adopts such a practice, and lives with his female slaves, as with persons who are unworthy of the rank or station of his wife. When he does form a legitimate connexion, the laws of marriage are as much respected as in any country in Europe, and almost every Brazilian has a greater number than usual of lawful children, by women who are remarkable for correctness of conduct, and domestic duties. Connexions of nearer kindred than are allowed with us are very usual, but they are sanctioned by the example of crowned heads, both in Spain and Portugal,—such as a man marrying the child of his brother and sister. Even the

connexion of still nearer relatives, I am sorry to say, takes place; but it is very rare, and pointed at; and, as far as I could learn, as much stigmatized by public reprobation as in this country. Two persons were shown to me as living in this way, and with expressions of horror by my informant. It is true that I did meet in the woods of the serra of Mantiqueira, one mixed family of blacks and whites, who exhibited in their dances painful indications of licentious habits; but I believe they were all born in slavery, and displayed rather examples of that demoralizing state, than of the general character of the Brazilians.

But of all charges, that of dishonesty and robbery seems most unfounded, and I know no country through which I would now travel with a greater feeling of security. In the vicinity of Rio a robbery is sometimes committed on the hills by fugitive slaves, and in the low grounds, about the bay, by vagrant sailors; but when the serra is once passed, there is no further danger. My friend, Mr. Duval, travelled for weeks together through the country, by night and day; he no where hesitated to enter a wood, or stop at a solitary rancho, and never felt himself, nor heard from others, any cause for the apprehension of danger. Whatever

is forgotten at the little ranchos on the road, is found untouched when the passenger returns. Mr. Milward left articles coming up, which had escaped his memory; they were kept for him as a solemn deposit, and delivered to him when we were going back. The miserable places called quartos, afford little protection against thieves, and the open ranchos still less; yet we never lost the smallest article when together, nor I by myself, when we separated. But there is one experiment of mine, which, I cannot help thinking, is highly creditable to the native integrity of the people. It was universally believed, and the report went every where before me, that I was bringing with me a chest of gold from the mines, and I was in a state utterly helpless and unprotected, being myself a total stranger, and having no one with me but a poor despised negro for a guide, who was held in no more estimation than the mule he led. I passed through solitary countries, where there was neither police to hunt out a delinquent, a prison to put him in if he was caught, nor a judge to condemn him if he was guilty. I was carrying an object of great temptation and cupidity, inviting, as it were, the people to come, and carry it off, who were themselves prejudiced and angry at the very act of my

taking it out of the country, and I met them every day in lonely mountains and wild woods, where I might disappear with my treasure, and no question or inquiry be ever made after me again. Yet I brought my chest of supposed gold, perfectly safe, through a people who seemed to think it was their property, and that I had no right to take it away, an instance of forbearance in this lawless country, as you and others are pleased to call it, which, I doubt, would not happen in England at the present day, or in Ireland either, since the days of "rich and rare."

With respect to the climate, it is impossible to commend too highly either its temperature or its salubrity. At S. José, during the chuve fria, and its continuance, the sensation of cold was disagreeable, and the thermometer fell to 64° Fahr. Its greatest range was from that to 79°, but it generally stood at 69° and 70°; that, you will recollect, was a midsummer heat, and the general feel of the air was quite refreshing and delightful. But it was also the rainy season, a mortal period in every other tropical climate. For eight or nine hours a day, during some weeks, I never had a dry shirt on me, and the clothes I divested myself of at night, I put on quite wet in the morning. When it did

not rain, which was very rare, there shone out in some places a burning sun, and we went smoking along, the wet exhaling by the heat, as if we were dissolving into vapour. Such weather in Africa, in a corresponding latitude, no human constitution could bear; and almost every European who has encountered it, has fallen a victim to it. But not so in Brazil; no one is affected by those states of the atmosphere which are so mortal elsewhere. For myself, I never enjoyed higher health or spirits, than when I was actually dissolving in sun or rain, either by heat or wet. It appears to me then, that the account left by Cambrensis,* of the ancient salubrity of Ireland, may be also applied to modern Brazil;* and it has with some reason grown into a proverb, that it is a country where a physician cannot live, and yet he never dies. There was no doctor at S. José, but I was told there had been two at S. João d'el Rey, and that one of them had left because he could get no patients, and that the other, for a long time, had no patient but himself.

The varied face of nature also, is another

* "Aëris tanta est clementia, ut nec nebula inficiens, nec spiritus hic pestilens, nec aura corrumpens; medicorum opera parum indiget." —*Camb.* cap. 9.

striking circumstance in this country. In the course of my journey I passed over six different surfaces, strikingly distinguished from each other in their aspect, formation, and productions. The first was the Beira-mar, the rich plain which extended from the edge of the sea to the base of the great serra, generally about sixty miles in breadth. This is, with some exceptions, a flat surface, with an alluvial or sandy soil, exceedingly fertile, covered with fazendas, and generally well cultivated; in which the original forests of the country have been almost entirely superseded by bananas, mangas, and other fruit-bearing trees, and the roads lined with clipped hedges of mimosa, resembling those of hawthorn in England. Among the plants confined to this district, and which I did not observe out of it, is the balsam,* so highly prized in the East. It covers all the trees and hedges with its flexible climbing stems, and ornaments them with its yellow flowers, and long pendant orange pods as large as lemons; these last when touched are very sensitive, immediately burst open into separate flakes, which curl up and expose on the inside ranges of large flat seeds, enveloped in an aril or coat of rich

* Momordica balsamina.

scarlet, shining in lucid gum, which, contrasted with the bright yellow of the pod, give the plant in that state an appearance not less beautiful than singular. The Arabs of Egypt and Palestine, and the Turks of Asia Minor, infuse these pods in oil, expose it to the sun till it becomes red, and then apply cotton dipped in it to fresh wounds, and prize it above the balsam of Mecca. I suspect it was originally imported from hence with other oriental plants, which now are equally common in Brazil, though its value as a vulnerary is not yet known or appreciated.

Among the insects is an enormous spider, which I did not observe elsewhere. In passing through an opening between some trees, I felt my head entangled in some obstructions, and on withdrawing it, my light straw hat remained behind. When I looked up, I saw it suspended in the air, entangled in the meshes of an immense cob-web, which was drawn like a veil of thick gauze across the opening, and was expanded from branch to branch of the opposite trees, as large as a sheet, ten or twelve feet in diameter. The whole of this space was covered with spiders of the same species,* but of different sizes; some of them, when their

* Aranea maculata.

legs were expanded, forming a circle of six or seven inches in circumference. They were particularly distinguished by bright spots. The cords composing the web were a glossy yellow, like the fibres of silk-worms, and equally strong. I wound off several on a card, and they extended to the length of three or four yards.

A gentleman of Languedoc, some time ago attempted to establish a manufacture of spider silk, and so far succeeded that he made gloves and stockings from the fibres of the web; the great objection, however, to his success was, the implacable hostility of these insects to each other. Reaumur placed five thousand in fifty different cells; but the larger destroyed the smaller, till but one or two were left in each cell. This objection to the process did not exist in this Brazilian species; for here the insect was not solitary, but gregarious; and colonies of more than one hundred occupied the same web, and lived in amicable communion together. Conde Linhares had intended to make some experiments on the tenacious threads of this spider, but it remains for others to carry his intentions into effect.

The next diversity of country was the Serra Acima—the great ridges of clay covered with immense forests of timber. A considerable part

of these seems to consist of mounds of earth without any admixture of rock. We saw, in some places, deep sections of the hills where either a part had fallen away, or it had been cut down. They presented perpendicular faces of earth, some of them near a hundred feet deep, into which the roots of lofty trees had penetrated to an incredible depth, almost realizing the poet's description,* that they had extended as far below, as the branches above the surface of the soil. In many of these vast heaps of clay, we could not detect a stone as large as a boy's marble.

It was on the summits and sides of these, that the primeval forests of the country still continue to flourish. Several of the trees were distinguished for their beauty and singularity. Among them, were the different kinds of the embeaporba.† This tree stands with a naked stem, surmounted by bare branches, from the extremities of which immense palmated leaves depend. In some species, these are covered on the under side with a hoary down, which, in the heat of the day, they turn up to the sun, so that whole patches of the surface seemed

* "——Quæ quantum vertice ad auras
Æthereas, tantum radice ad Tartara tendit."—
Georg. II. 292.

† Cecropia pellata and palmata.

covered with rich white blossoms. The flower of this tree is highly prized, as a remedy against the bite of serpents; and its wood is principally used in the manufacture of gunpowder, as it is soft, and the charcoal made from it very inflammable. With this, was strikingly contrasted the coral tree.* Spikes of rich scarlet blossoms, of the papilionaceous kind, stood erect on the branches, as large as those of a horse-chestnut, and gave to the surface a glow of the brighest red. A curious peculiarity marked its leaves; the mimosas and acacias that were near it, expanded their foliage to the utmost in the sun, and closed them up when he was obscured by the clouds; but the erythrina seemed actuated by an opposite instinct. It closed up its large trefoil leaves in the heat of the sun, as if protecting its buds from his burning rays. This curious precaution has been noticed by the poets:—

> "Whilst Erythrina o'er her tender flower
> Bends all her leaves, and braves the sultry hour."†

These, with different kinds of melastoma, gave to the woods a rich glow; so that the foliage, seen on the opposite sides of a sloping glen,

* Erythrina corallodendron.

† Darwin. Econ. Veg. Canto IV. 562.

presented a checkered surface of the most vivid and varied hues. These forests still abound with Brazil-wood,* which is even found at Tijuca in the immediate vicinity of the capital. People are prohibited from exporting it, but not from cutting it down. It is therefore used for the commonest purposes, and, as we saw, often mixed with others in building their houses. A man may burn, if he pleases, this precious wood to dress his food, but he must not sell it. It is a large tree with pinnate leaves, and distinguished in the woods by its thorny branches, and its echinate or bristly pods.

But among the trees, which gave the woods, to an European, a peculiar character, none was more striking than the singularity of the palm-trees. These were seen shooting above the rest to an immense height, with their long and slender stems, crowned with feathery foliage, like ostriches' plumes, waving in the air; and of all these, the assai† is the most elegant and beautiful. It is the taper palm which yields the cabbage. It rises from a slender stem, not more than six inches in diameter at the base; and it shoots up to the height sometimes of 100 feet, or more. The stem is marked by

* Cæsalpinia echinata.

† Euterpe oleracea.

annual rings, five or six inches asunder, and near the summit is a long succulent cylinder, from whence the leaves issue. This green footstalk contains the embryo of the plant. It consists of the rudiments of the future leaves, beautifully plated, and convoluted at the centre; and their developement from hence forms the elegant tuft that crowns the summit. This portion is exceedingly tender, yielding a pleasant and wholesome vegetable, like cabbage, boiled, and eaten with meat. From all parts of the woods, this elegant tree was seen shooting above its companions, waving in every breeze its long flexible stem, and its tuft of light silken leaves. It seemed, indeed, to belong more to the sky than the earth; for in some places, it crowned the summits of the highest ridges, and was the only one whose foliage was seen projected on the blue sky, like Berenice's hair floating in the starry firmament; for the stem that supported it was so slender, that it could not be discerned in the distance. It was with great regret I first attacked this beautiful tree, and utterly destroyed it for the small portion of its esculent part. When we saw it growing on the side of a hill, near the road, we seized its taper stem, and bent it down, till it snapped off near the root, and lay prostrate across the way.

Here with a faka, we cut off its graceful head, and left its body to decay. In any other country, this might be deemed a wanton and unjustifiable act of destruction; but in this, it was only removing that which encumbered the soil with its profusion.

But the destruction of a tree in these woods does not lessen the abundance of vegetable life. On every blasted stem which had lost its own bark and leaves, a crop of parasites had succeeded, and covered the naked wood with their no less luxuriant leaves and flowers. Of these, the different species of air-plants* and barren pines† were the most remarkable. The first were no less singular than beautiful; they attach themselves to the dryest and most sapless surface, and bloom as if issuing from the richest soils. A specimen of one of these, which I thought curious, I threw into my portmanteau, where it was forgotten; and some months after, in unfolding some linen, I was astonished to find a rich scarlet flower, of the gynandrous class, in full blow: it had not only lived, but vegetated and blossomed, though so long secluded from air, light, and humidity. Every withered tree here was covered with them, bearing

* Epidendron. † Tillandsia.

flowers of all hues, from the brighest yellow to the deepest scarlet. They are easily propagated by transplating; and my good friend, Colonel Cunningham, had all the trees in his garden at Bota Fogo covered with them. The barren pine is not less extraordinary. It also grows on sapless trees, and never on the ground. Its seeds are furnished, on the crown, with a long filmy fibre, like the thread of gossamer. As they ripen, they are detached, and driven with the wind, having the long thread streaming behind them. When they meet with the obstruction of a withered branch, the thread is caught, and revolving round, the seed at length comes into fixed contact with the surface, where it soon vegetates, and supplies the naked arm with a new foliage. Here it grows, like the common plant of a pine apple, and shoots from its centre a long spike of bright scarlet-blossoms. In some species,* the leaves are protuberant below, and form vessels like pitchers, which catch and retain the rain water, furnishing cool and limpid draughts to the heated traveller, in elevations where no water is to be found. The quantity of fluid contained in these reservoirs is sometimes very considerable; and in

* Tillandsia, utriculata, and lingulata.

attempting to reach the flower-stem, I have been often drenched by upsetting the plant.

It is generally supposed that these woods abound with birds of all sorts, whose flight and note continually enliven the forest; but nothing can be more still and solitary than every thing around; the silence is appalling, and the desolation is awful; neither are disturbed by the sight or voice of living thing—save one, which only adds to the impression. Among the highest trees and in the deepest glens, a sound is sometimes heard so singular, that the noise seems quite unnatural. It is like the clinking of metals, as if two lumps of brass were struck together; and it sometimes resembles the distant and solemn tolling of a church bell, struck at long intervals. This extraordinary sound proceeds from a bird called arapongo, or guirapongo. It is about the size of a small pigeon, white, with a circle of red round its eyes. It sits on the tops of the highest trees, and in the deepest forests; and though constantly heard in the most desert places, is very rarely seen. It is impossible to conceive any thing of a more solitary character than the profound silence of the woods, broken only by the metallic and almost preternatural sound of this invisible bird, coming from the air, and seeming to follow you

wherever you go. I have watched with great perseverance, when the sound seemed quite close to me, and never but once caught a glance of the cause. It passed suddenly over the top of a very high tree like a large flake of snow, and immediately disappeared.

The next variety of soil is the campos. The huge forest-covered mounds of clay suddenly cease, and subside into extended undulating plains, totally divested of wood, except some smaller shrubs. The soil is not of clay or fine mould, but generally of shingly or gravelly quality, as if formed of the breaking down and decomposing of larger rocks. In some places they are intersected by romantic wooded glens, and in others scored with deep rents or rifts, which expose a sandstone clay, tinged with many varieties of bright red and purple. When we passed, they were clothed with a rich green-sward interspersed with flowers; but in dry seasons, they are covered only with the brown culms of sundry coarse grasses and sedges.

Among the few trees found on the plains, are various species of solanum. One of them, called the Fruta do Lobo,* was exceedingly abundant. It is a thorny plant about eight feet

* Solanum undatum.

high, with large purple blossoms. It bears an enormous fruit, frequently attaining the size of a child's head, which is shaken by every wind from the trees, and seen rolling about the road. It is considered by the natives a powerful remedy against lumbago.

The birds here were more numerous, and their notes more cheerful, than in the dense forests we had passed. The most usual and attractive is João de Barros, or John of the Clay, because he always builds a regular house of it. We saw this constantly, in shape like an Irish cabin, built on the upper side of a large branch of a tree, not pendant, but erect. It consisted of an edifice, with an arched roof, having a corridor, or porch, with a door leading to an inner apartment. With a singular instinct, the door was always found on the side from which the wind less frequently blew; and the edifice was so strong and well constructed, that one has been known to last its ingenious architect many winters. The bird is about the size of a lark, or larger, and is sometimes called the yellow thrush. It is exceedingly familiar, and generally found near ranchos and villages. Whenever we approached we saw John clinging to the branch of a tree, in an upright position, announcing our coming

with a shrill lively note, as if he was the warder placed there to warn the inhabitants of the arrival of a stranger. His cheerful salutation, however, was not confined to human habitations, but he frequently accosted us far from the haunts of men; and his lively note of welcome often met our ear in the most solitary places.

Another familiar and cheerful bird was the Ben te vi, so called from the perfect accuracy with which he pronounces these words. He is about the size of a sparrow, and distinguished by a circle of white round his head, with a yellow belly. Whenever we passed, he put his head out of the bush, and peeping at us from under the leaves, he said, "ben te vi—Oh, I saw you!" with an arch expression, as if he had observed something which he could tell if he pleased.

The next variety of surface presented to us were the rocky serras, which rose like huge walls from the surface of the plains, bearing in their bosoms the metalliferous veins, and impregnating all the soil at their bases with the particles of precious ores washed down them. The features of this region were very extraordinary, and had no kind of affinity with the former two. The summits of these naked stony ridges were often surmounted by fantastic

protuberances, which the inhabitants imagined had human resemblances. One was called Ita Columi, or the Child of Stone; and another, Serra da Cara, from its likeness to an enormous visage.

From this stony Arabia, we entered into the mato, or thicket; low eminences, covered over with copse and brushwood, frequently interspersed with ferns and brambles, resembling similar soil and aspect, in the middle regions of Europe.

Finally, we passed between bristly pikes, and conical mountains of bare granite, ascending to the sky, with well-defined forms, and smooth taper surfaces, not having the most distant resemblance to any other objects we had passed. Thus, then, in the course of my tour, I visited, at no great distances, in the same country, six distinct regions, not having any affinity or likeness to each other in structure, soil, or productions; and affording a greater variety of surface, perhaps, than is to be found in all the countries of Europe.

Among the objects which excited my particular attention in the interior, was the state of slavery in which the greater part of the population remain; and as it is a subject likely to be one of considerable interest in a few months, when the

total abolition of the slave trade is to take place in Brazil, I shall add a few observations, which I have gleaned here, to the mass of information you are already in possession of.

The first capture of a negro slave on his own soil by the Portuguese, was an event of deep importance, and it is particularly described by the Portuguese historian Barros.* In the year 1445, Diniz Fernandez, a citizen of Lisbon, and an esquire to the King Dom John, being moved by the famous benefits which the Infante had bestowed on him, armed a ship with the intent to set out on discovery, designing to go beyond the boundary which other captains had reached; so having passed the river, now called Senegá, which divides the land of the Moors from the first negroes, he fell in with some barks, in which certain blacks had gone out to fish, and by the aid of a small boat, which hung over the poop of his vessel, he overtook one of the barks, in which were four negroes, who were *the first* that came into Portugal. The historian eulogizes Diniz, that he did not stop, at the time, to make forays into the country, and capture more slaves on his own account, but brought those he had caught back to his master,

* Barros, Dec. I. book i. chap. 10.

who was mightily pleased, not only with the discoveries he had made, but with the people he carried with him, which had not been delivered from the hands of the Moors, like the other negroes, which had up to that time come into the kingdom, but had been *caught* on their own soil. Such was the origin of African slavery, which these four unhappy captives have, for nearly four centuries, entailed upon their devoted country.

The first slaves sent to America, I believe, was by the Spaniards, who, in the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella, exported to the new world from Spain, the children and descendants of such negroes as had been taken on the coast of Africa, with which a traffic had been established by the Portuguese and Spaniards, since the first capture by Diniz. The memory of the most amiable Bishop of Chiapa has been charged with the stigma of having been the first to propose this sacrifice of the Africans, in order to spare the native Indians, to whom he was attached; but it appears that a royal decree had been issued for the purpose in 1501, and Las Casas did not go to America till 1502: however he might, therefore, from a mistaken zeal, approve of the substitution of slavery, he was not the originator or prime promoter of it.

The first African slaves were brought to Hispaniola, when, in 1510, fifty were sent from Seville to work in the mines, where the native Indians were exterminated by similar labour—"And it is a fact worthy of observation," says an American writer,* "that Hispaniola, the place where this flagrant outrage against nature and humanity was first introduced into the new world, has been the first to exhibit an awful retribution."

If the Portuguese were the first Europeans to make negro slaves, it is but justice to them to say, that they were among the first to exclaim against the traffic. In the year 1758, Manoel Ribeiro Rocha, an ecclesiastic, published, at Lisbon, a work called "Ethiopia Resgatada,"† or Africa redeemed; which made at the time a considerable sensation. I had heard that copies of it existed in Rio, at the imperial library, and that of S. Antonio; but I searched both without effect, and had some reason to imagine they had disappeared, when the question of the total abolition of the slave trade was a subject of general concern in Brazil. The librarian, however, of S. Bento, found for me a copy in the library of the convent,

* Washington Irving.

† Ethiopia Resgatada, empenhada, sustendada, instruida e libertada. Pelo Padre Manoel Rebeiro Rocha. Lisboa, 1758.

from which I made some extracts, as specimens of the notions entertained by the enlightened Portuguese, seventy years ago, on the subject.

The work commences with the following commendatory verse :—

> " Obscuros Lybiæ populos, quos dira coëgit
> Servitii injustum sors subiisse jugum ;
> Legali redimit ductu Ribeiron, et illis
> Ad libertatem nobile pandit iter."

On the condition of a slave, he says, " The greatest misfortune that can happen to man is slavery. He becomes liable to all the miseries which are contrary and repugnant to his nature and constitution ; for being little less than the angels, he descends from his rank in the creation, and becomes lower than the brute. While alive, slavery considers him as dead ; while free, as subject ; while born to rule and possess, as being born only to be ruled and possessed. The slave labours without relief, fatigues himself without profit ; his subsistence is the most vile ; his dress the most coarse ; his repose on some hard board, or on the cold earth itself."

On the manner of making slaves, he says, " Some by force or fraud are dragged to the ships of the Portuguese ; others, without any

fault of their own, are condemned, with their wives, children, and relatives, to perpetual slavery, for some imputed delinquency of their father. Some are captives, taken in an unjust war, and then sold as slaves, because they are prisoners; since these barbarous African chiefs, who are excited to wage these wars, know nor care nothing of its rights, but the stronger plunders his neighbour. Some, without any such necessity, are sold by their own parents, seduced by the bribes of Europeans. Some, by the fraudulent charge of homicide, which, though the cause of the man's death be not known, is made the pretext of dragging and selling whole families into perpetual bondage."

On the light in which it ought to be considered, he observes, "The whole of this traffic in Guinea, Angola, and Caffraria, is illegal, and ought to be condemned as a deadly crime against christian charity and common justice; and the excuse of purchasing slaves, in infidel countries, and transporting them from thence, to sell them, is most iniquitous, and a mortal sin, which nothing but invincible ignorance could excuse, which no slave-merchant can ever dare to plead."

Among the remedies he proposes;—"That

as captives, slaves are equal to their masters by the rights of nature, though in servitude by the chance of war; those already in bondage shall be liberated when they have served their masters *five* years, a period of time sufficient to repay them for their purchase-money; and that as any attacks (assaltos) on native Africans, to make them captives, is not legitimate war, but plunder and robbery, it ought to be regulated by the same laws, and visited by the same punishment as PIRACY."

These sentiments seem to have anticipated those of the people of England; and one of the proposals, making the slave trade piracy, has been since adopted by us; it would be well if we were to take the other into consideration also. A law does exist in Brazil, by which a slave is entitled to his manumission at the end of ten years, but it is always evaded.

The clergy, however, had not all adopted the humane and just opinions of Ribeiro. The Bishop of Pernambuco, in 1808, published his "Analysis"* of the justice of redeeming slaves; "to unmask," as he said, "the insidious principles of a sect of philosophers, and take out of the mouths of his flock the apple of the infernal

* Analyse sopra Justicia do Commercio do resgate dos Escravos. Pelo Joze Joaquim da Cunha. Bispo de Pernambuco. Lisboa, 1808.

serpent." He divides his work into eighteen propositions. One of them is, "That the commerce of slavery is a law dictated by circumstances to barbarous nations, for the greater good and the lesser evil." Another, "That slaves ought to be protected by the laws only as minors, without presuming to enter into judgment with their masters; for, if they had the power of complaining to a magistrate, of citing their masters to any discussion, it would excite a civil war in families, which would soon become general with all parties in the state." With such doctrines, promulgated by such authority, a poor slave had but little chance of benefiting by his act of manumission.

In the year 1815, a treaty was made with Portugal, and signed at Vienna, on the 23d of January, for the immediate abolition of the slave trade in all parts to the north of the equator; the contracting parties being animated, as the words of the treaty express it, "by a sincere desire to accelerate the moment when the blessing of peaceful industry, and innocent commerce, may be encouraged, through the extensive portion of the continent of Africa by this abolition." By the first article, the subjects of Portugal are prohibited from purchasing slaves, or carrying on the slave trade

at any part of the coast to the north of the line, on any pretence whatever; and by the fourth article, it was engaged to determine a future period, when the slave trade should be abolished altogether.

On the 18th of July, 1817, a further convention was made on the subject, to adopt the means of preventing the practice in prohibited places, and it was provided that the ships of war of each nation should respectively visit merchant vessels that may be suspected, on reasonable grounds, of carrying on the illicit traffic, and detain them, if they have slaves on board, and send them for adjudication, as soon as possible, where there is a competent tribunal to try the cause; for which purpose, two mixed commissions, consisting of an equal number of English and Portuguese, shall be established,—one to reside in the dominions of his Britannic Majesty, on the coast of Africa, and the other in Brazil.

Upon the separation of the empire of Brazil from the kingdom of Portugal, the sovereigns of Great Britain and Brazil respectively acknowledge the obligation which devolves upon them, to renew and confirm the regulations for the final abolition of the slave trade; it was agreed, therefore, on the 3d of November,

1826, by a convention at Rio, that at the expiration of three years, to be reckoned from the exchange of the ratifications of the treaty, it should not be lawful for the subjects of the Emperor of Brazil to be concerned in carrying on the slave trade, under any pretext, or in any manner whatever; and the carrying on of such trade, after that period, by any person, subject to His Imperial Majesty, should be deemed and treated as piracy. Four months were allowed for the exchange of ratifications, which took place within that time. An act passed the English Parliament, on the 2d of July, 1827, to carry into execution this convention; and, on the 23d of March, 1830, the permission of the Brazilians to trade to the south of the line ceases, and from that time the traffic is to be totally abolished, and treated as piracy wherever it is carried on.

Immediately on signing the convention, the people of Brazil became greatly alarmed at the supposed consequences that would ensue to the country, if they were allowed to import no more slaves to do their ordinary labour. A considerable part, therefore, of the capital of the country was embarked in the traffic, to make the greatest possible use of it as long as it was permitted. In 1820, the number of slaves imported into

Rio, was 15,020; but in 1828 they increased to the immense number of 43,555; and, calculating on the number imported for the first quarter, it was supposed that 52,600 would enter the port of Rio alone, before the expiration of 1829.* In the year 1806, the number imported into the whole country amounted only to 38,000. Thus, while we in England imagined that the traffic was nearly extinguished in all christian countries, it was increasing in one town alone, in a proportion frightful beyond all comparison, and that in a free constitutional state, under the new order of things. There is now, however, such a glut of human flesh in the markets of Rio, that it has become an unprofitable drug. Ten years' credit is allowed to the purchaser; and you will not be displeased to hear, that many speculators have been ruined by their unholy importations.

When a cargo of slaves arrives, it is generally purchased by people who are called ciganos, or gipsies, and who nearly resemble all the individuals of the race which I have

* The following is the return made in a progressive ratio for the last nine years:—

1820.....15,020	1823.....20,349	1826..... 33,999
1821.....24,134	1824.....29,503	1827..... 29,787
1822..... 27,363	1825.....26,254	1828..... 43,555

1829 to March..... 13,459.

seen in different parts of the world. They have dark olive complexions, black eyes and hair, in common with many Brazilians; but they have that obliquity of aspect, and sinister expression of countenance, that at once marks them as a peculiar race; and on all occasions they display a callosity of feeling, and a ferocious and wild temper, that assimilates them with their kind, and unfortunately fits them for the traffic which they almost exclusively exercise in Rio. It is generally supposed they were among the delinquents, which were early sent from Portugal to people the new world, where they have multiplied, and, as elsewhere, preserved their caste.

The place where the great slave mart is held, is a long winding street called the Vallongo, which runs from the sea, at the northern extremity of the city. Almost every house in this place is a large ware-room, where the slaves are deposited, and customers go to purchase. These ware-rooms stand at each side of the street, and the poor creatures are exposed for sale like any other commodity. When a customer comes in, they are turned up before him; such as he wishes are handled by the purchaser in different parts, exactly as I have seen butchers feeling a calf; and the whole examination

is the mere animal capability, without the remotest inquiry as to the moral quality, which a man no more thinks of, than if he was buying a dog or a mule. I have frequently seen Brazilian ladies at these sales. They go dressed, sit down, handle and examine their purchases, and bring them away with the most perfect indifference. I sometimes saw groups of well-dressed females here, shopping for slaves, exactly as I have seen English ladies amusing themselves at our bazaars.

There was no circumstance which struck me with more melancholy reflections than this market, which I felt a kind of morbid curiosity in seeing, as a man looks at objects which excite his strongest interests, while they shock his best feelings. The ware-rooms are spacious apartments, where sometimes three or four hundred slaves, of all ages and both sexes, are exhibited together. Round the room are benches on which the elder generally sit, and the middle is occupied by the younger, particularly females, who squat on the ground stowed close together, with their hands and chins resting on their knees. Their only covering is a small girdle of cross-barred cotton, tied round the waist.

The first time I passed through this street,

I stood at the bars of the window looking through, when a cigano came and pressed me to enter. I was particularly attracted by a group of children, one of whom, a young girl, had something very pensive and engaging in her countenance. The cigano, observing me look at her, whipped her up with a long rod, and bade her with a rough voice to come forward. It was quite affecting to see the poor timid shrinking child standing before me, in a state the most helpless and forlorn, that ever a being, endued, like myself, with a reasonable mind and an immortal soul, could be reduced to. Some of these girls have remarkably sweet and engaging countenances. Notwithstanding their dusky hue, they look so modest, gentle and sensible, that you could not for a moment hesitate to acknowledge, that they are endued with a like feeling and a common nature with your own daughters. The seller was about to put the child into all the attitudes, and display her person in the same way, as he would a man; but I declined the exhibition, and she shrunk timidly back to her place, and seemed glad to hide herself in the group that surrounded her.

The men were generally less interesting objects than the women; their countenances

and hues were very varied, according to the part of the African coast from which they came; some were soot black, having a certain ferocity of aspect that indicated strong and fierce passions, like men who were darkly brooding over some deep-felt wrongs, and meditating revenge. When any one was ordered, he came forward with a sullen indifference, threw his arms over his head, stamped with his feet, shouted to show the soundness of his lungs, ran up and down the room, and was treated exactly like a horse, put through his paces at a repository; and when done, he was whipped to his stall.

The heads of the slaves, both male and female, were generally half shaved; the hair being left only on the fore part. A few of the females had cotton handkerchiefs tied round their heads, which, with some little ornaments of native seeds or shells, gave them a very engaging appearance. A number, particularly the males, were affected with eruptions of a white scurf, which had a loathsome appearance, like a leprosy. It was considered, however, a wholesome effort of nature, to throw off the effects of the salt provisions used during the voyage; and, in fact, it resembles exactly a saline concretion.

Many of them were lying stretched on the bare boards; and among the rest, mothers with young children at their breasts, of which they seemed passionately fond. They were all doomed to remain on the spot, like sheep in a pen, till they were sold; they have no apartment to retire to, no bed to repose on, no covering to protect them; they sit naked all day, and lie naked all night, on the bare boards, or benches, where we saw them exhibited.

Among the objects that attracted my attention in this place were some young boys, who seemed to have formed a society together. I observed several times in passing by, that the same little group was collected near a barred window; they seemed very fond of each other, and their kindly feelings were never interrupted by peevishness; indeed, the temperament of a negro child is generally so sound, that he s not affected by those little morbid sensations, which are the frequent cause of crossness and ill-temper in our children. I do not remember, that I ever saw a young black fretful, or out of humour; certainly never displaying those ferocious fits of petty passion, in which the superior nature of infant whites indulges. I sometimes brought cakes and fruit in my pocket, and handed them in to the group. It was quite

delightful to observe the generous and disinterested manner in which they distributed them. There was no scrambling with one another; no selfish reservation to themselves. The child to whom I happened to give them, took them so gently, looked so thankfully, and distributed them so generously, that I could not help thinking that God had compensated their dusky hue, by a more than usual human portion of amiable qualities.

A great number of those who arrive at Rio are sent up the country, and we every day met cofilas, such as Mungo Park describes in Africa, winding through the woods, as they travelled from place to place in the interior. They formed long processions, following one another in a file; the slave-merchant, distinguished by his large felt hat and puncho, bringing up the rear on a mule, with a long lash in his hand. It was another subject of pity, to see groups of these poor creatures cowering together at night in the open ranchos, drenched with cold rain, in a climate so much more frigid than their own.

A slave pays to government ten per cent. on the first price, and the same sum every time he is purchased again. On proceeding into the interior, he pays five and a half milreis when leaving Rio, and five and a-half on passing the

Rio Preto, and thirty vintems on crossing the bridge of the Parahiba; so that every one sold at the Vallongo for 250 milreis, and brought to the Minas Geraes, and there sold again, pays to government 61,600 reis, or about 8*l.* at the present currency. If, therefore, out of the number imported into Rio, 30,000 be annually sent up the country, the whole will produce to government a revenue of 240,000*l.* per annum from Rio alone. To consent, then, to the abolition of the slave trade, attended with such a serious deduction from the embarrassed revenues of the country, was no small sacrifice on the part of the government, and affords a strong presumption that the emperor is very sincere, in his humane wishes for the entire extinction of this traffic.

The number of blacks, and mulatto offspring of blacks, in the country, is now estimated at 2,500,000, while the whites are but 850,000; so that the former exceed the latter in the proportion of three to one. From this great superiority, serious apprehensions have long been entertained, that some time or other, in the present diffusion of revolutionary doctrines on this continent, they will discover their own strength, assert independence for themselves, and Brazil become a second St. Domingo. This

is particularly the case at Bahia and Pernambuco, where almost all the negroes are brought from the same part of the coast of Africa; and there is a general union and understanding among them, as speaking the same language, and feeling an identity of interests; and here several conspiracies have been formed, and risings attempted. In April, 1828, a partial insurrection took place in some engenhos at Bahia, and apprehensions were entertained that it had ramified to Pernambuco. But at Rio the case is different. The negro population consists of eight or nine different castes, having no common language, and actuated by no sympathetic tie; insomuch so, that they frequently engage in feuds and combats, where one, or even two hundred of a nation on each side are engaged. This animosity the whites cherish, and endeavour to keep alive, as intimately connected with their own safety.

The difference of caste is very strongly marked in the colour of their skin, and still more in the expression of their countenance, to a degree of which I had no conception. Before I went to Brazil, I could no more distinguish one black from another, than I could sheep in a flock; but in this country, it struck me that the variety of the human face was still more strongly marked

in the black than in the white colour: the gradation of the latter was only from handsome to ugly, but of the former, from handsome to hideous; and I think I have met among these dark visages, some of the most engaging and some of the most revolting aspects in nature. This diversity is attended with disunion and separation, on which the Brazilians lay great stress.

The superiority of the coloured population is not greater in number than it is in physical powers. Some of the blacks and mulattos are the most vigorous and athletic looking persons that it is possible to contemplate, and who would be models for a Farnesian Hercules. Their natural muscular frame is hardened and improved by exercise; and when the fibres are swelled out in any laborious action, they exhibit a magnificent picture of strength and activity. Their faka, or long knife, they use with tremendous effect. They sometimes hurl it, as an Indian does his tomahawk, with irresistible force, and drive the blade, at a considerable distance, through a thick deal board. In this respect, they are strongly contrasted with the flabby Brazilians of Portuguese descent, who look the very personification of indolence and inactivity; and should they ever unhappily come

into contact with their vigorous opponents in the field, it would seem as if they would be crushed at once, under the mere physical weight of their antagonists.

This muscular strength, however, is not universal, but only displayed by the natives of particular districts in Africa. The principal marts from whence they are brought, are Angola, Congo, Angico, Gaboon, and Mosambique. Those of Angola are the most highly esteemed, and are in every respect the most tractable, and next to them the natives of Congo. The Angicos are tall and robust, and their skins jetty black and shining. They are generally distinguished by their singular mode of tattooing, which consists of three gashes made in each cheek, and extending, in a circular form, from the ear to the angle of the mouth. The Gaboons are also tall and comely, with great muscular strength; they are, however, less esteemed, from their exceeding impatience of the state of slavery to which they are reduced. They are greatly addicted to suicide, and take the first opportunity of destroying themselves. Instances have occurred, where a lot of eighteen or twenty, purchased together, have made a determination not to live; and in a short time they all stabbed themselves, or sunk rapidly

under an insupportable feeling of despondency. The people of Mosambique include generally all those of Southern Africa. They are distinguished by their diminutive stature and feeble limbs, but still more by their colour, inclining to brown, and some even as light as mulattos. It is remarkable that vigour and muscularity in a negro seem intimately connected with his hue; the distinctive characteristic of the race is a black skin, and the more dark the exterior the more perfect seems the person; and as it recedes from its own and approaches to our colour, it is proportionately imperfect.

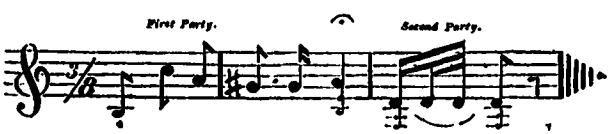
From the operation of the abolition laws, and the activity of our cruisers to the north of the line in enforcing them, the trade for slaves, in the last ten years, has been directed to the coast of Africa on both sides of the Cape of Good Hope, and the negro race in Brazil has sensibly deteriorated; they seem to approach the character of Caffres or Hottentots; and I have more than once seen among them persons distinguished by the peculiarity that marked the Venus from that country, exhibited in England some years ago. One was a girl of fourteen, of most extraordinary proportions. This race is particularly noted for a propensity to eat lime and earth; whether it be from a determination

not to live, or from a morbid and irrepressible appetite for such things, like some diseased children, they persist in it with the most obstinate perseverance, notwithstanding they are severely flogged, till they at length sink under it. They are distinguished also by their extraordinary mode of tattooing; the flesh is raised into protuberances, so as to form a succession of knobs, like a string of beads, from their forehead to the tip of their nose, and very frequently the upper lip is perforated by a hole, through which the teeth are seen.

Notwithstanding the antipathies which the different tribes bring with them from their own country, and the petty feuds they excite in Brazil, cherished and promoted by the whites, there is often a bond which connects them as firmly as if they had belonged all to the same race, and that is a community of misery in the ships in which they are brought over. The people so united by this temporary association, are called Malungoes; they continue attached to each other ever after, and when separated, are quite rejoiced if they meet again.

The negroes bring with them their language and usages, which are found in Brazil as recent and original as on the coast of Africa, from whence they only just arrive. The language

is so diversified by dialects, that different tribes do not understand each other. When those of the same caste work together, they move to the sound of certain words, sung in a kind of melancholy cadence, commenced in a tenor tone by one part, and concluded in a base by the other. A long line of negroes, with burdens on their heads, sing it as they go along, and it is heard every day, and in almost every street in Rio. This, which seems a regular national song, I was particularly curious to know the import of, but no one could interpret the words for me, and the negroes, when asked, either did not, or pretended not to know, as if it was something occult, which they made a mystery of. The following is the notation of one of the airs or tunes to which the words are chanted, taken down on the spot by Mr. Duval.



Their music consists of several different instruments; the first is a rude guitar, composed of a calabash, fasted to a bar of wood, which forms a neck to the shell; over this is stretched a single string of gut, which is played on by a rude

bow of horse-hair; and by moving the finger up and down along the gut, three or four notes are elicited, of a very plaintive sound. The minstrel is generally surrounded by a group sitting in a circle, who all unite their voices as accompaniments to the music. The next is half a calabash, containing within it a number of small bars of iron parallel to each other, with one extremity flat, presenting a surface like the keys of a harpsichord: this he holds in both hands, and presses with his thumbs, in succession, the flat bars, which emit a tinkling sound like a spinet. This instrument is very universal. Every poor fellow who can, procures one of those; and as he goes along under his burden, continues to elicit from it simple tones, which seem to lighten his load, as if it was his *grata testudo, laborum dulce lenimen.* A third is a single string stretched on a bamboo, such as I have described to you before at Chapado do Mato, in the Minas Geraes.

These instruments are used by themselves or accompanied by the voice; and, I think, are called by the general name of merimba, though the word is more particularly applied to the bars of iron. There are others used as accompaniments to dancing, of which the negroes are passionately fond. One is a hollow trunk of a

tree, covered at one end with a piece of tense leather; on this the performer gets astride, and strikes it with the palms of his hands, eliciting a very loud sound, which is heard to a considerable distance. This "spirit-stirring drum" has a powerful effect on all the negroes within the extent of its sound. There is a small green at S. José, near the Chafariz, where the negroes assemble every Sunday evening to dance. Here the performer bestrides his drum, and assembles the dancers by the sound. The first strokes, which are heard all around, produce an electric effect; they rush to the spot from all quarters, and in a little time they are worked up to a degree of hilarity little short of frenzy. They dance, sing, shout, and scream till the whole neighbourhood echoes with their noise.

As a substitute for this drum, they sometimes use bones, which the dancers strike together. These are accompanied by an instrument the size of a pepper-box, having some rattling substance inside. This is attached to a handle, which one holds over the heads of the rest; and while they strike the bones he rattles the box, and so the time is regulated. This mode of directing the dance, I have seen at the Matanza.

The dances begin with a slow movement of two persons, who approach each other with a

shy and diffident air, and then recede bashful and embarrassed; by degrees, the time of the music increases, the diffidence wears off, and the dance concludes with indecencies not fit to be seen or described. Sometimes it is of a different character, attended with jumping, shouting, and throwing their arms over each other's heads, and assuming the most fierce and stern aspects. The first is a dance of love, and the latter of war. Dancing seems the great passion of the negro, and the great consolation which makes his slavery tolerable. Whenever I have seen a group of them meeting in the street or the road, or at the door of a venda, they always got up a dance; and if there was no instrument in company, which rarely happened, they supplied its place with their voice. At all the fazendas, where there is a number together, Saturday night is usually devoted to a ball, after the labours of the week. A fire of wood or the heads of milho is lighted up in a hut, where they assemble, and they continue dancing till light in the morning.

The obeah man in Brazil is called Mandingeiros, because he comes from the Mandingos, near Senegal. He is not at all so formidable a person, nor does he exercise such powerful fascinations as elsewhere, probably because the

country from which he came has been for some time interdicted, and the practice is not kept up in other tribes, and so is fallen into disuse.

The patriarchal feeling, however, that considers a tribe as a family, the members as brothers, and the prince as the father, still strongly subsists. They believe that the tie of allegiance to the prince never ceases under any change of circumstances, no more than the obligation due from a son to a father. These princes, therefore, are frequently seen sitting on a stone in the street, surrounded by a crowd who come to them for judgment. At the corner of the Travessa de S. Antonio, where it opens into the Rua do Cane, is a curb stone or post, which was pointed out to me, as being for many years the throne of an African prince from Angola. Every evening after the labours of the day, and on Sundays and holidays at any hour, he was found on the spot, holding his court, and a number of blacks around him, appealing to and submitting to his decrees. He was a strong athletic young man, of general good conduct, and comported himself with spirit and dignity in his regal situation. If a black, for any offence committed against his brother, deserved punishment, it was inflicted with a stick by an officer

in attendance. He of course took cognizance of matters only occurring between themselves, and his jurisdiction was not objected to by the police, because it tended to good manners. He had, a short time before my arrival, abdicated his stone, and I could not learn where he had gone, but his throne remained vacant till his return. You have heard the notion of African princes among an importation of slaves, laughed at as an absurd fiction. This I know to be a fact, from the unquestionable authority of a frequent eye-witness, and also that it is a common occurrence. The natives of Congo elect a king among themselves, to whose decrees they submit in a similar manner.

Many of them still adhere to their pagan impressions, though by far the greater number are anxious to seem to get rid of them, and be baptized, because it confers on them a certain consideration; and before they go to mass and confess, they are considered altogether as brute beasts. They are generally not asked, but on their arrival, baptized as a thing of course, as they are for the most part adults, and of a competent age. Some ecclesiastics are scrupulous, and will not perform the ceremony till they have previously received such instruction, as to know the nature and obligation of the rite; this was

the case with some of the blacks of the Company at St. José. The prejudiced vigario would not suffer them to be baptized, because they were not instructed, and he would not instruct them, it seems, because they belonged to the Company.

The constant salutation of a baptized negro, in the interior, is, "Jesu Christo;" and the answer is, "por sempre—for ever." This strongly resembles the tradition of the Irish salutation used at the present day, as connected with the first introduction of Christianity, and a mark to distinguish the baptized from the pagan. Another answer is "a Deos," a contraction of the sentence, "Louvado seja Deos que faz santos —Praised be God who sanctifies us." When I first met groups of negroes on the road, who all thrust out their hands to me, I thought they were beggars. It was merely this mode of salutation, which they never omit; whenever they return from work, or retire for the night, they all come into the family of their masters, and give and receive this form of salutation.

Many of the laws, made at different times, were favourable to the slave. All holidays were allowed him, amounting to thirty-three; so that the institution, highly injurious to the industry of the white, was a boon to the black of no.

small value, not only as an indulgence, but as a time he might dedicate to industry on his own account, and in accumulating money to purchase his freedom; and by law he could compel his master to liberate him, by paying him his original cost. They make on their own account, in their hours of leisure, different vessels from calabashes and the bottle-gourd.* These resemble cups, jars, pitchers, and other articles, into which they ingeniously shape the pepo of the young plant, which grows here as it did in Italy, into whatever form it is moulded in the tender state, and when it ripens and hardens into ligneous fibres, still retains it. These they are allowed to sell on Sundays, when there is a kind of market established for such commodities; from this circumstance, as well as from the manner in which assisted nature herself forms these utensils, they are called Louça de Deos, or "God's earthenware."

If a slave has produced his master ten children, he may demand his freedom; but these and similar regulations are so constantly evaded, and have been so seldom enforced, that they are a mere dead-letter. To restrain his violence, a master is liable to a fine for ill using his slave,

* Cucurbita lagenaria.

but no part of it goes to the unfortunate sufferer. He can even be compelled to hand over the slave to another master, on proof of ill usage; but though the most glaring outrages are committed every day, the law is never enforced, and the slave has no alternative but running away.

In the "Journal do Commercio," and the "Diario," there are always ten or twelve advertisements of "escravos fugidos—runaway slaves." When they abscond, they generally betake themselves to the Corcovado, or the contiguous mountains, and here, armed with spears, they attack travellers, and live by plunder. The beautiful road leading along the aqueduct is infested with these fugitives, living in a state of nature, and many robberies have been lately committed there. The police is particularly employed under an officer, called Capitão do Mato, or captain of the woods, hunting them down; and in a dense thicket, in the chain of hills just behind Rio, a whole colony of these unfortunate beings was lately found in the greatest misery. When brought back, besides the punishment of flogging, they are distinguished by a very extraordinary looking mark. An iron collar is firmly rivetted on their necks, from which a long bar projects at nearly right angles, terminated at

the other end by a cross, or by a broad curl, so as to resemble a fleur-de-lis. The intent of this is as well to stigmatize them as fugidios, or deserters, as also to impede them in their flight, as the iron bar entangled in the bushes, would soon cause the collar to strangle them, if they attempted to force their way through the underwood. Sometimes the extremity of the bar is terminated by five fingers, and this implies that the slave had carried off with him some property, and so was a surripio, or thief, as well as a fugidio. The multitudes of slaves seen thus neck-fettered in the streets, is a proof of the numbers who are continually attempting to escape, and also a proof how intolerable is the state of existence in which they find themselves.

Nothing can be more unfounded, or, indeed, more absurd, than to say, they are reconciled and happier in slavery in America, than in freedom in their own country. They seem to have as keen a sense of bondage, and to repine as bitterly at their lot, as any white men, in the same state in Africa; indeed, if we might judge from the effects, still more. I have never heard that suicide is common among the unhappy Europeans, detained in slavery on the Barbary coast; it is the daily practice in Brazil. Besides the instances I have mentioned elsewhere, the

harbour is constantly covered with the bodies of blacks, on whom no marks of violence are found, and who are known to have thrown themselves in, to escape from an insupportable life. This is particularly the case at Bota Fogo, where several respectable persons have told me, they frequently encountered black bodies when they went to bathe. I have seen them myself left by the tide on the strand, and some lying weltering just under our windows.

But we were all eye-witnesses to a very striking and melancholy fact of this kind. One evening, some police men were conducting a woman to the calabuoço, along the road leading from Cateté. Just when they came opposite our door, where there was an open descent to the strand, the woman suddenly rushed down the rocks, and cast herself into the sea. The place in which she fell was too shallow to drown her; so after lying on her face a moment, she again raised herself, and rushing forward into deeper water, she sunk, and disappeared. The police men made no attempt to save her; but Mr. Abercrombie ordered some of the blacks of our house to follow her. They immediately did so, brought her up apparently dead, and carried her into our hall, with her head hanging down, and exhibiting the supposed mortal symptom

of froth collected on her lips. The negroes who humanely saved her, supposing her dead, threw her down on the bare stones, just as they would be treated themselves; and she lay there, like any other worthless and despised object: but on examining the poor creature, we had reason to suppose it was still possible to restore suspended animation; a bed was therefore brought, on which she was laid, divested of her wet and tattered garments, and wrapped in a warm blanket. Friction, and other usual means, were then resorted to; and after being persevered in for some time, she showed symptoms of returning animation. She was seized with convulsions, succeeded by a violent shuddering: then ejected a quantity of water from her stomach, opened her eyes, and muttered some incoherent words, and, at length, fell into a slumber, from which she awoke in a sensible state.

She gave the following account of herself. She was a native of Minas, on the coast of Guinea, where she was one night seized in her hut, dragged on board a slaver, brought to Rio, and sold at the Vallongo. She was then baptized at the church of the Candellaria, by the name of Francisca, and brought by her master, a Captain Philipe, to his chacara, near Bota

Fogo. She was employed in washing, which she willingly performed; but her master treated her with the greatest cruelty and inhumanity, and in proof, she showed her arms and side, which were greatly swelled and inflamed, from the effects of blows she had received a few days before. She could endure it no longer, and she fled to the woods. Her master immediately gave sixteen milreis to the capitão do mato; she was pursued and overtaken, and was on her way back to her former state; but she conceived such a horror at again returning, to encounter the brutality she had before experienced, that she determined not to be brought home alive; so in passing along the shore, where there is an opening to the sea among the rocks, just opposite our house, she rushed down, and hoped she had effected her purpose.

She appeared very grateful for the kindness with which she was treated, so different from any thing she had ever experienced in Brazil before, and proposed to do any work with alacrity to which she was put; but when we spoke of her returning to her master, she expressed a degree of horror, both in her looks and manners, that amounted to distraction, and seemed to think she was but little indebted to those who saved her life, if she was again to

be given up to that suffering, than which loss of life was more tolerable.

The next day I went to Bota Fogo, to learn something of her master, and to interest some friends in her behalf, who, I knew, were very kind and humane. But a slave, I found, was no legitimate object of compassion; and they, whose deepest sympathies would have been roused for a white European so circumstanced, had not the smallest for a black African. In reply to my statements, I was assailed with stories of the wickedness and worthlessness of the race in particular to which she belonged. I inquired if they were addicted to theft, or other immoralities; it was admitted that they were not, but they were notorious for a practice equally dishonest, that of cheating their masters, who had paid their money for them, by daring to kill themselves when life was no longer tolerable. I further learned, that her master could come and claim her, as he would his horse or his mule; that she could be sent to the calabouço, to be first punished for her dishonest attempt on her own life, and then restored to him, to be dealt with as he pleased.

In effect, in a day or two her master did come and claim her, and his claim could be no more resisted, than if he had demanded any

other article of his property. Her arm and side were still greatly inflamed, but she had no alternative, and was obliged to go away with a stern fellow sent for her. All that could be done, was done by his Excellency, Lord Strangford. When a slave flies and returns, or is brought back, he endeavours to procure the interference of some one, who becomes his padrinho, or sponsor, and intercedes for his forgiveness. If the person consents, he is always sure the fugitive will be forgiven, for it is considered a high offence to refuse. This kind office Lord Strangford undertook, and secured the poor creature from present punishment, but could be no protection against future cruelty, which, no doubt, will end in determined suicide.

This horror at slavery is carried to such an extent, that they not only kill themselves, but their children, to escape it. Negresses are known to be remarkably fond mothers, and all I have seen confirms the observation of others; yet this very affection often impels them to commit infanticide. Many of them, particularly the Minas slaves, have the strongest repugnance to have children, and practise means to extinguish life before the infant is born, and provide, as they say, against the affliction of bringing slaves into the world. Is it not a

frightful state which thus counteracts the first impressions of nature, eradicates the maternal feelings from the human breast, and causes the mother to become the murderer of her unborn offspring?

The yearning after liberty is the strongest feeling of a negro's mind. It is usual with people, at their deaths, to emancipate their slaves, particularly ecclesiastics, as if to make an atonement for having kept them in that state, as long as they could hold them in their grasp. Slaves, who have expected this, and have had their hopes frustrated, sink rapidly under the effects of a bitter disappointment, and die of broken hearts. An incident of this kind occurred at S. José, a few days before my arrival. An ecclesiastic in the Minas Geraes died, and all his slaves were emancipated by his will. It is requisite, however, to pay a certain duty on such manumission, and as no provision had been made in the will for this, it was necessary to sell one or two of the slaves to pay for the rest. One of them was brought to S. José, where he sunk rapidly under the feelings of disappointed hope. He refused to take any sustenance, and it was necessary to have his mouth held forcibly open by other blacks, while it was poured down his throat;

but he persisted in his determination to emancipate himself, as he said, and in a short time he succeeded. He was buried, as well as I remember, the day before we arrived.

But this irrepressible horror at a state of slavery is the parent sometimes of the greatest crimes; and when negroes expect a testamentary freedom, they anticipate the time by the premature death of the testator; and thus, a humane and benevolent intention, is often the cause of the death of the intended benefactor, and becomes a frequent incentive to poison and assassination. I knew a man in the Organ mountains, who displayed a most frightful picture of the effects of slavery in the different relations of life. The man's name was Felice, a gamelleiro, or one who undertakes to cut down woods, to convert the timber into gamellas, and sell them through the country. He was a mulatto, the son of a white man by a negro slave. You will suppose that his bondage ceased at his birth, and that the offspring of a white man could not be the bondsman of his parent. No such thing; he was liable to the condition of his mother, and the father kept his own son a slave, to sell him, or dispose of him, as he would his mule. Being ill, however, and near to die, he made his will, left his child

his freedom, and apprised him of it. After some time, he recovered, and having some dispute with his son, he threatened that he would alter his will, and that he should be sold with the rest of his stock. This his boy determined to prevent, assassinated his father in a wood, got possession of the will, demanded his freedom, and obtained it. This circumstance was perfectly well known to every body in the neighbourhood, but no process was instituted against him; and I saw him every day driving his mules, loaded with gamellas, and not chargeable, as I could hear, with any other delinquency, except the horrible one of having murdered his father to obtain his freedom.

The circumstance that particularly struck me in Brazil, was the interminable period to which the offspring of a slave is doomed to bondage, from generation to generation. It is a taint in the blood, which no length of time, no charge of relationship, no alteration of colour, can obliterate. Hence it is that you see people of all hues in a state of bondage, from jet black to pure white. On the ecclesiastical estates, every precaution is taken to preserve the original colour; and when, from an intermixture of white blood, the complexion of the children is becoming too light, they endeavour to restore

its darkness, by obliging the fair slaves to intermarry with those who are blacker than themselves; the good fathers being alarmed at the prospect of keeping, in a state of slavery, human faces as fair as their own.

'I one day stopped, with a friend, at the house of a man on the road to Tijuca, to obtain some refreshment. In the garden, at the back of his venda, we saw some young negroes playing about, and among the rest, a very pretty white boy. He had a soft fair face, light curling hair, blue eyes, and a skin as light as that of a European. Attracted by the very engaging little fellow, I caressed him, and inquired of the man of the house, if he was his son. He said not; but that he was the son of an Englishman, and his slave, and he mentioned the name of his father. Shocked and incredulous, I denied the possibility of his father's knowing that the child was in bondage; but I was then informed, that the father not only knew it in this instance, but that, in other cases, he is known to sell his own white child along with its mother! Oh, my friend; here is a picture of slavery! Here is the story of Mr. Thomas Inkle actually revived, and an European, in the nineteenth century, selling a mother, with whom he had lived as with a wife, and enhancing her value, by selling his own son along with her.

If then we put out of the question the injury inflicted on others, and merely consider the deterioration of feeling and principle with which it operates on ourselves, ought it not to be a sufficient, and, indeed, unanswerable argument, against the permission of slavery?

The exemplary manner in which the paternal duties are performed at home, may mark people as the most fond and affectionate of parents; but let them once go abroad, and come within the contagion of slavery, and it seems to alter the very nature of the man; and the father has sold, and still sells, the mother and his children, with as little compunction as he would a sow and her litter of pigs; and he often disposes of them together.

This deterioration of feeling is conspicuous in many ways among the Brazilians. They are naturally a people of a humane and good-natured disposition, and much indisposed to cruelty or severity of any kind. Indeed, the manner in which many of them treat their slaves is a proof of this, as it is really gentle and considerate; but the natural tendency to cruelty and oppression in the human heart, is continually evolved by the impunity and uncontrolled licence in which they are exercised. I never walked through the streets of Rio, that

some house did not present to me the semblance of a bridewell, where the moans and cries of the sufferers, and the sound of whips and scourges within, announced to me that corporal punishment was being inflicted. Whenever I remarked this to a friend, I was always answered that the refractory nature of the slave rendered it necessary, and no house could be properly conducted unless it was practised. But this is certainly not the case; and the chastisement is constantly applied in the very wantonness of barbarity, and would not, and dared not, be inflicted on the humblest wretch in society, if he was not a slave, and so put out of the pale of pity.

Immediately joining our house was one occupied by a mechanic, from which the most dismal cries and moans constantly proceeded. I entered the shop one day, and found it was occupied by a saddler, who had two negro boys working at his business. He was a tawny cadaverous-looking man, with a dark aspect; and he had cut from his leather a scourge like a Russian knout, which he held in his hand, and was in the act of exercising on one of the naked children in an inner room; and this was the cause of the moans and cries we heard every day, and almost all day long.

In the rear of our house was another, occupied by some women of bad character, who kept, as usual, several negro slaves. I was awoke early one morning by dismal cries, and looking out of the window, I saw in the back yard of the house, a black girl of about fourteen years old; before her stood her mistress, a white woman, with a large stick in her hand. She was undressed, except her petticoat and chemise, which had fallen down and left her shoulders and bosom bare. Her hair was streaming behind, and every fierce and malevolent passion was depicted in her face. She too, like my hostess at Governo, was the very representation of a fury. She was striking the poor girl, whom she had driven up into a corner, where she was on her knees appealing for mercy. She showed her none, but continued to strike her on the head and thrust the stick into her face, till she was herself exhausted, and her poor victim covered with blood. This scene was renewed every morning, and the cries and moans of the poor suffering blacks, announced that they were enduring the penalty of slavery, in being the objects on which the irritable and malevolent passions of the whites, are allowed to vent themselves with impunity; nor could I help deeply deploring that state of society in which the

vilest characters in the community, are allowed an almost uncontrolled power of life and death, over their innocent, and far more estimable fellow-creatures.

You will allege, perhaps, that chastisement in this way may be often quite necessary, though it be sometimes abused, and carried to an excess; but what will you say when I tell you, that they frequently perish under this infliction of evil passion, and negroes every day are sacrificed, not so much as delinquents punished for offences, as victims offered up to the revenge or malice of their masters. A Portuguese merchant was pointed out to me at the Alfandega, as a remarkable example of this. He had ill-used a black so as greatly to exasperate him; and as he was not his master, the slave was not in the same personal awe of him, and he struck him in the face in a sudden fit of passion. The merchant said little about it at the time, but the inexpiable insult of receiving a blow from a negro slave rankled in his heart. He sometime after applied to his master to sell him, but as he was a good negro, for whom he felt a regard, he declined, till he was offered a considerable sum, which he thought it not prudent to refuse. The money was immediately paid, and the slave transferred; but the moment his new master

obtained possession of him, he sent him to the calabouço, or place where slaves are punished. Here he obtained an order, as is usual, from the intendant of the police, for three or four hundred lashes, or as many as he might think necessary; and he had him flogged every day with such severity, that he gradually sunk under the punishment, and the merchant never thought his affront expiated, till he saw his dead body sent in a mat to the burying ground of the Misericordia.

Sometimes the gratification of these passions is too sweet to be intrusted to other hands, so they take it into their own, and of this several stories were told me; I shall mention one:—A family was about to remove to the country, and the master ordered one of his slaves to prepare the carriage. The slave, as often happens, had some attachment which he did not wish to leave, and neglected the orders; and when they were repeated in a more peremptory manner, he took an axe, and in a sudden fit of frenzy or despair, attempted to cut his master down. He was seized and disarmed, but he was not sent to the calabouço, where it was said his punishment would not be sufficiently severe; so he was tied up in a cellar in the house, where his

master every day inflicted the chastisement with his own hands, and never took him down till he was dead. This was universally known, and mentioned to me as rather a more salutary and effectual way of domestic punishment, than sending to the calabouço. The master suffered nothing in public estimation, and was never called to any account for the murder.

The wretched slave often anticipates the result by inflicting death upon himself in an extraordinary manner. They have a method of burying their tongue in their throat, in such a way as to produce suffocation. A friend of mine was passing through the carioca, when a slave was tied up and flogged. After a few lashes, he hung his head apparently lifeless, and when taken down, he was actually dead, and his tongue found wedged in the œsophagus, so as completely to close the trachea.

While this tremendous power is permitted to the master, the laws of the country are frequently a dead letter, with respect to the slaves, who violate them, and commit real crimes with impunity; they rob, and poison, and assassinate, without any possibility of bringing them to condign punishment, when it is not the masters' interest or pleasure to do so. Men, notoriously guilty of these crimes, are too valuable

a property to be offered up to public justice, which would allow the master no compensation for the loss; they are, therefore, protected, or at the utmost sold to another, if he does not wish to keep them any longer himself. At S. José, as I stated to you, I knew a gentleman who had lost his family, and narrowly escaped himself, from poison administered by a slave, and he only sold her to another. At Bota Fogo, a notorious murder was committed, and the perpetrators are still at large. Some time before our arrival, races were established on the strand; and the sailor of an English ship, who resided at Praya Grande, on the other side of the bay, hired a boat, with four negroes, brought over provisions, and pitched a tent on the strand, where he sold his refreshments to some profit. When he was returning in the evening, the negroes conceived the idea of robbing him, and seizing the money he had made. One of them, who was steering, purposely turned the boat out of her course, and when the sailor attempted to rectify the fault, he struck him on the head with the tiller, knocked him senseless, and threw him overboard. They then threw the furniture over likewise, and proposed to return to their master with the boat empty, and say the sailor had remained behind with his tent.

The man's wife was also on board; so, to prevent her from making a discovery, they threw her over after the furniture. She clung to some article, floated, and was providentially taken up by a passing boat.

When she reported the circumstance, proceedings were immediately commenced against the murderers, by Colonel Cunningham, on behalf of the widow, and they were apprehended. After the suit was protracted for a year, by various delays, he was at length called on to produce the body of the sailor, as indispensable evidence that he had been murdered at all. This could not be done; the process was stopped, and the negroes liberated. It was well known that the proprietor of one of them, a stout athletic man, and so a valuable slave, had applied to the juiz, before whom cognizance of the fact was taken, gave him 500 milreis to protract, and finally put an end to the process. The master was considered as only protecting his property.

In fact, a very considerable part of the wealth of Rio is vested in this property, and slaves form the income and support of a vast number of individuals, who hire them out, as people in Europe do horses and mules. This is one great cause, that prevents the adoption of machinery

in abridging manual labour, as so many persons have an interest in its being performed by the slaves alone. This is particularly the case in the custom-house. A crane was imported from England, capable of enabling two negroes to move and manage weights which now require twenty; but this was violently opposed and effectually resisted, as every person in the establishment possessed a number of negroes, even down to the lowest clerks, who had five or six each, for whose labour they were paid. "It would excite laughter, if it was not for the sorrow which it occasions," said Bonafacio Andrada, "to see twenty slaves in Brazil employed in carrying to market twenty bags of sugar, which might be conveyed thither on one well-constructed cart drawn by two oxen or a pair of mules."

There has been such a rage for acquiring this sort of property, that negroes themselves who had obtained their freedom, frequently sent ventures to Africa to purchase their countrymen, who were brought back to them in exchange for the beads and looking-glasses which they sent out. It is a frightful thing, that those poor creatures have been so instructed by the example of their masters, and their conversion to christianity has only taught them to reduce their

kindred to that state, to which they themselves felt such a horror.

Every intelligent person in the country seems convinced, that a state of slavery is highly injurious to its best interests. The abolition of the slave trade abroad, and the gradual extinction of a state of slavery at home, had begun to engage the attention of the first constituent assembly, when it was suddenly dissolved; but the spirit and feeling that suggested the consideration, still exists in the country, notwithstanding the powerful personal interests opposed to it. The preponderance of the black population is a subject of deep alarm, and the danger of its increase has reconciled many people to the speedy abolition of the foreign trade; while the numerous obstacles presented to the industry and prosperity of the country by the employment of slaves at home, have convinced many of them, that its evils far exceed its benefits. As long as labour, they say, is performed by the hands of slaves, no white man who can buy them will exert himself, and indolence and inactivity will ever be, as it is now, the characteristic of the Brazilian. As long as a man's property is vested in slaves, which he must have employed by others in order to live himself, no machinery to abridge manual labour

will ever be admitted or encouraged in the country, and the people will continue to use the few miserable and crazy expedients which their ancestors used two centuries ago. As long as two-thirds of the community are regarded as mere chattels, the interests of the proprietor will ever be considered paramount to public justice; and crimes will be committed with impunity by those who are not looked upon in the light of moral agents, because their punishment would be a loss of property to their owners. As long as men live as they do with their female slaves, the sacred bonds of parental and filial duty will be disregarded; fathers will sell their own children as their slaves, and children will destroy their own parents, as slaves who endeavour to escape from bondage. As long as the unfortunate beings are objects to which the laws afford an inefficient protection, but are subject to the uncontrolled caprice and tyranny of their masters, it will be a continued incentive to every bad passion of the heart to indulge itself with impunity. These, and a thousand similar reflections, independent of political and natural rights, continually suggest themselves to the Brazilians, and incline them to consider seriously the evils of slavery in their country.

It is true that a strong opposition was made,

and still is making, against even the abolition of the foreign trade. Vasconcellos, the most popular man in the country, has declaimed, and the provincial council of the Minas Geraes have petitioned, against it; and the people at Rio believe, and I heard it more than once said, that Mr. Wilberforce had received 5000*l.*, and other members of the House of Commons in the same proportion, to withdraw their opposition to the extension of the period. This however is but a partial and temporary feeling, which will soon die when it is found to be ineffectual.

The number of free blacks and mulattos is very considerable already in the country. It is calculated of the former, that there are 160,000; and of the latter 430,000, making about 600,000 free men, who were either slaves themselves, or the descendants of slaves. These are, generally speaking, well-conducted and industrious persons; and compose indiscriminately different orders of the community. There are among them merchants, farmers, doctors, lawyers, priests, and officers of different ranks. Every considerable town in the interior has regiments composed of them; and I saw at Villa Rica two corps of them, one consisting of four companies of free blacks, and the other of seven companies of mulattos. The benefits arising

from these, have greatly disposed the whites to consider the propriety and necessity of gradually amalgamating the rest with the free population of the country, and abolishing for ever that outrage upon the laws of God and man, the condition of a slave.

Next to the prohibition of the importation of black slaves, the great and obvious policy of the government would be, the encouragement of white freemen of every European nation. The failure of the late experiment with the Irish and Germans is greatly to be regretted; but it has partially succeeded; and two German, with a Swiss and an Irish colony, have been located in different parts of the country.

In the year 1818, Baron Busch, with Messrs. Peycke and Freyreiss, established a community of Germans on the river Peruhype, in the province of Porto Seguro, each of them having received a square league of ground from government, and they called the colony Leopoldina, in honour of their amiable countrywoman. In 1826, it contained 600 persons and fifteen coffee plantations. They built a small schooner to convey their produce; and, in 1827, they despatched her from Villa Caravelhas, their nearest sea-port, to Rio, with their first cargo of coffee. Some unreclaimed Indians are still in the neigh-

bourhood, who in April, 1828, killed a few of the people.

Another German colony of S. Leopoldo was established by the government, in the district of S. Pedro do Rio Grande, in a very healthy and temperate country; each colonist obtained two oxen and a horse. Wheat, rye, and all European vegetables thrive as in the natural soil, and their plantations are very flourishing: in 1828, the population amounted to 6000 persons.

In 1819, a colony of Swiss was established at Canto Gallo, at the Morro Quemado, behind the Serra dos Orgãos. It was intended to build on the spot a new town, called Novo Friburgo; but the ground on experiment proved exceedingly sterile, and altogether unfit for cultivation, so much so, that neither foreign nor native produce could be made to succeed. It was said the land was the property of the inspector-general of the colony, and that he disposed of his barren district to government for this purpose, at an enormous price. The establishment, in consequence, is fast declining, and many of the colonists are found in all parts of the Minas Geraes.

After the unfortunate affair at Rio, in 1828, the emperor sent 220 Irish, as a colony, to

Bahia, as I stated before, where they were located at Taporoa, in the comarca of Ilhéos; here they form a thriving community, and their affairs are directed by a commission of competent persons. The governor of Bahia strongly recommended them to the care of the council.

There is now an opportunity of augmenting those European colonies by a most valuable acquisition. The Portuguese constitutionalists are, generally speaking, the most intelligent and enlightened men of the community to which they belonged; and the principles they avow, and which they have sacrificed every thing to support in Europe, are guarantees of their attachment to the new constitutional order of things established in Brazil. Instead, therefore, of fostering an unreasonable prejudice against the introduction of such men into the country, let them be all invited, not as soldiers with arms in their hands to form a suspicious army of strangers, but as peaceable citizens and agriculturists, to amalgamate with the free community of the country. They merit every protection and encouragement which it is possible for the government of Brazil to afford them; and there is no one who contemplates these gallant men with blighted prospects and almost

extinct hopes, suffering the extremes of privation in a foreign land, who does not sincerely wish to see them located, and cherished in a kindred country, where their presence would be an important accession to a young nation;—not less for their intelligent minds, than for their independent spirit.

On my return to Rio, I was concerned to find Lord Strangford very unwell, and he purposed to leave the heats of the low city for the cooler and more salubrious air of the hills. In the beginning of February, we proceeded to the fazenda of Messrs. March and Watson, situated in the rear of the Organ mountains, about fifty miles distant. We embarked in a country boat, and taking advantage of the sea-breeze, landed in the evening at Piedade, at the north end of the bay. The first object presented to me was the very elaborate process of making lime, so very scarce, yet so very necessary to the country. All the shells were carefully gathered on the shore; they were then piled up in layers, and a thick stratum of wood interposed between each, and in this way they were calcined. The quantity of wood was very great, compared with the few shells, and the consumption of it for such a purpose must be enormous.

About four years ago, a quarry of lime-stone

was discovered in the neighbourhood of Rio, by a German miner, who came out to search for gold, but found what was really a greater treasure. He brought specimens, and made proposals to quarry it. He was likely to succeed; but a Portuguese, through whose ground it was necessary to convey it, for water carriage, refused to give a right of passage, unless he was allowed one half of the profits. The German would not accede to this unreasonable demand, and after some fruitless negotiations, he left the country in disgust; but as he had carefully concealed the place of discovery, he carried his secret along with him. Specimens of this precious fossil are in the hands of some people in Rio, who have no doubt of the reality of the discovery, but they have not yet been able to find out the place.

From Piedade we proceeded to Magé, where we slept. This is a considerable town, built about fifty years ago, on the left bank of a river of the same name, over which is a large wooden bridge. We heard the sound of bugles and military music as we entered the town, as if to welcome our approach: it proceeded from the militia of the place, who were just returning from parade. It stands in a flat alluvial country, which extends from the bay to the base of the

Organ mountains, and is constantly inundated by the streams which intersect it in all directions; it is, therefore, the most, and almost the only, unhealthy spot in the country, and subject to intermittent fevers, which prevailed here to an alarming extent before we left Rio.

Next day we arrived at Freixal to breakfast, where we could get neither coffee nor milk, though the rancho was surrounded with cows and coffee plantations; but our host had more than the indifference of a Brazilian landlord, and seemed to care little in what manner he accommodated us. A short way from hence, we began to ascend the serra of Coitoo. The weather was intensely hot below; but before we had climbed up half way, the rain set in, and when we gained the summit, the transition from heat to cold was almost intolerable. We passed between two very high peaks, which formed a vast avenue to a table land, which ran horizontally before us, confined by two parallel ridges, rising as barriers at each side. Through this the cold wind and rain came sweeping along, and perhaps no one ever experienced a greater and more sudden change of sensation than we did from the extremes of temperature. It was so intolerable, that when we arrived at Mr. March's house, we were

obliged to go to bed and wrap ourselves in warm blankets. The thermometer stood below at 91° in the shade, above it fell to 60°.

The fazenda is called Santa Anna de Pacacu; it extends for sixteen miles in length and five or six in breadth, bounded by the summit ridges of parallel serras. These are nature's walls, which form the divisions of property in Brazil. The contiguous farms are separated by the agoa vertente, that is, the line along the ridge, where the waters begin to turn from each other, and the streams to descend at each side. Nothing can more strongly mark the extent of the country, and the comparatively scanty population, than that such immense and indefinite boundaries still mark the limits of farms in the vicinity of the capital.

The fazenda was generally pasture land from which the wood had been cleared, and its place supplied with a rich matting of grass, whose broad succulent leaf covered the whole surface of the soil with a soft verdant carpet, green all the year, and affording the greatest abundance of nutritious herbage, on which were grazing one hundred and fifty horses and mules, about one hundred head of black cattle, and the same number of sheep and pigs; and to take care of these, one hundred negroes were located in

R. Wad. pe del.

THE VARGEMOR HORSE PASTURE,

with a view of the Pikes and the Cabesc de Frade or Frutes head

different parts. The villages they form, are called senzallas.

We visited one of them, about eight miles from the house; the whole way was exceedingly romantic and beautiful, the verdant sward frequently intersected with broad pure streams of limped water, and alternated sometimes with low copse, and sometimes with lofty woods. We first arrived at the vargem, or horse-pasture. This was several hundred acres of rich sward, with a corrée, or enclosure, in the centre, filled with mares and foals; before it rose the peaks of the Organ mountains with singular majesty and beauty, the most conspicuous of which was the Cabeço de Frade, or the priest's head.

From this vargem several foals had been taken and destroyed by wild beasts, which still haunt in great abundance, the woods of these mountains. There are therefore persons who are professed hunters, and undertake to destroy them. One of these lives in the town of Magé, in the plain below. When any serious loss has been sustained, he is sent for. He comes up the mountains with his attendants, and never fails to track and kill the ferocious animal. A short time before, a tiger had destroyed several colts. It is usual on such occasions to watch for the beast of prey, and shoot him when he comes

back to consume the remnant of the carcass; but this animal was grown so cunning, that after killing and half-devouring his prey, he never returned to finish it. He was therefore pursued by the Magé hunter for six days, and at length he took refuge in a tree, where he was shot. His skin was full of scars and perforations of former wounds.

Beyond the vargem was a roça, or an extensive plantation of milho, which also bore testimony to the existence of wild animals in the farm. Beside the plantation ran a broad stream, which abounded with tapirs. One of those had the night before come out of the water, and trampled down and destroyed the milho to a considerable extent. Our attendants had brought long guns in the hope of meeting the depredator, but, though we watched for some time, we could not get a sight of him.

At the extremity of this plantation was a senzalla. It exactly resembled a Hottentot's kraal. It consisted of forty or fifty huts, forming a circle, and including an area, where the occupants winnowed their corn, milked their cattle, and performed other usual works; the huts were rudely constructed of poles, thatched with palm leaves, so low that a man could only stand upright in the middle. A partition of wicker-

work divided each hut into two apartments; on one side was just room for a bed, on a platform of hurdles; on the other, a fire, which a negro keeps always burning in his hut in the hottest weather; the entrance was closed by a wicker door.

On another day, I accompanied Mr. Watson to see the manner of clearing woods for plantations of milho, or other produce. The woods of these mountains are still in their primitive state, gigantic and dense, and the only mode hitherto tried is fire. We passed through a wild glen, which opened into a beautiful vale, with gentle slopes up the sides of the hills that surrounded it; we suddenly came on it, and on emerging from a dark avenue of trees, we saw the whole extent of the vale, glowing red, like a vast furnace, of two or three miles in circumference. The indistinct crackling and roaring of the fire, was constantly interrupted by loud explosions, and discharges of smoke, which I thought proceeded from blasting rocks or trees with gunpowder, but it arose from a different cause. The woods abounded with bamboos of an immense size, called tacwara. As the fire seized these enormous tubes, the heated air within expanded, and every joint in succession burst open, with a noise as loud as the discharge

of a musket. The progress of the flame is followed by negroes, with hoes in their hands, who strike the ashes, when sufficiently cool, into the soil, and immediately drop the grain; and so rapid is vegetation when quickened by this process, that young blades of green corn are seen shooting up among the black and smoking stumps in one place, while the fire is raging in another.

The negroes on Sundays were permitted to amuse themselves after their own fashion; they sometimes employed it in entering the thick woods, and laying snares for different animals. From their dexterity our table was supplied with different kinds of game, among the rest the agouti, an animal resembling a hare, with very coarse fur, and the jacatengo, a large moor-fowl, called the Brazilian grouse.

We one day killed a jacarāca serpent, said to be, next to the urutu and cobra coral, the most venomous reptile in the country. It was six feet long, and eight inches in circumference; its scales were of a dingy green on the back, but grey and lucid on the belly. I had the curiosity to dissect it; it was a viper, that is viviparous, having twenty-four young ones, perfectly formed and nine inches long, in its uterus. The stomach contained nothing but a few leaves of plants and

blades of grass, and no insect of any kind; the heart was very small, and had no communication with the lungs; the aorta and vena cava were connected together by the shortest course, like those of the lizard tribe; so I presume the animal is amphibious, capable of remaining long under water—and torpid, capable of enduring long sleep. The mechanism of the back-bone was very curious; it consisted of 170 exquisitely formed articulations, movable in every direction like a ball and socket, without any projecting processes to impede their flexibility. The head was flat, and its cavity was very small; so that, certainly, the supposed wisdom of a serpent does not depend on the quantity of brains.

But the mouth was a subject of particular interest. It had four hooked fangs in the upper jaw attached to a bone. They were at first invisible, and covered with a sheathing like cats' claws; but by pressing on the bone to which the whole was united, they were elevated and protruded from the sheath to the length of an inch and a half; two of them were grooved and perforated, and at the base were blue follicles, which seemed to contain the poison. In the act of biting, when the teeth entered the flesh, the lips of the aperture pressing on the follicles, forced the poison

through the groove, and so it was deposited in the bottom of the wound. The cure most in repute against the bite of this formidable viper, is a certain bean * found in the woods. This the natives frequently carry in their pockets, to have ready if they should unhappily meet with occasion to use it.

The boa constrictor was once an inhabitant of these woods, but he has now retired far from the haunts of men, into the remoter forests of the Mato Grosso. His skin, however, is frequently used; it is tanned, and forms a hide nearly as thick as that of an ox. I have often seen boots and saddles made of its leather. Notwithstanding the quantity of serpents which still exists in the country, and the venomous quality of some of them, it is very rare to meet with a person who has suffered from their bite. I scarcely passed a day, at any distance from Rio, without meeting with one crossing, or by the side of the road, and the negroes enter the places where they are known to abound, with bare feet; yet I never could hear of one who had suffered from their poison.

After passing some time with our hospitable hosts in this elevated region, we again descended

* Favilla cordifolia.

to Rio, happy to find his Excellency much improved in health.

The approach of the season of Lent is indicated by natural appearances. The wooded hills about Rio are covered with a beautiful flowering shrub, in such profusion, as to give them a bright and vivid purple hue. It is for that reason called, Flor de Quaresma,* or the flower of Lent. An appearance equally striking presented itself in the streets, which were glowing with green and yellow hues, as vivid and general as the purple on the hills. This proceeded from vast quantities of balls of coloured wax, which filled the shops, and large baskets before the doors, of the shape and size of eggs, containing pure or scented water. In the Greek church, about this season of the year, they sell real eggs, coloured red, called paschal gifts, which the people say, are intended to represent the stains of Christ's blood, and they give them as presents to their friends to eat. I could not, however, conceive what the green and yellow eggs were intended for, till I learned by experience in a few days.

The Brazilians, like all people of a tropical climate and constitution, when the moment of

* Melastoma purpurea.

enjoyment comes, deliver themselves up to it with unrestrained hilarity. This is indulged particularly during the intruso, or jubilee, which precedes Lent, and the eggs were the principal pastime. The sport begins on Quinquagesima Sunday, and continues till Ash Wednesday. A friend brought me to pay a visit, and the first salutation we received, was a shower of green and yellow eggs pelted in our faces, by all the fair females of the family. We were then invited to the balconies of the windows, and saw all those in the street filled with girls, peeping out and watching the approach of some victim. When any appeared, he was assailed in all directions, and ran off bedewed with water, and his hat and coat covered with green and yellow egg-shells. If he stopped for a moment, when he saw nobody, and took off his hat to remove the wet, some laughing girl, perdue in an upper window, was ready with a basin of water, which came down on him in a sheet; if he ran to the opposite side to avoid it, he received another; and if he took the middle of the narrow street, he probably received both together.

Below in the shops, and behind hall doors, crowds of men stood with large syringes, and gamellas, containing several gallons of water, which

they ejected in a continued current in his face and bosom, so that by the time he arrived at the end of the street, he was as completely drenched, as if he was dragged through the bay. Should he, like Swift's passenger, first "fly, invoke the gods, then turning, stop" to scold, he was saluted by clapping of hands and shouts of laughter, from a thousand merry faces in all the windows round him. The Brazilian girls are naturally pensive-looking and retiring; but at this season they change their character, and their gravity and timidity are for three days, lost in inextinguishable merriment.

Sometimes we saw persons thrown down, and drenched with water, and pelted with eggs, almost to suffocation. Sometimes farinha was added, and whole baskets of flour discharged on his wet body, till he became all crusted over. This is particularly the case with blacks and mulattos, who look exceedingly grotesque when ornamented in this way. The theatre is always open at this season, where the sport is also carried on, particularly from the boxes into the pit.

To such an extent was this system of inundation carried, that one of the journals seriously complained, that the fountains of water would be exhausted, and the inhabitants, by their

profuse waste on this occasion, would be left without this necessary article of life, a circumstance which the dryness of the weather just before had rendered not improbable. Strangers, who are now so numerous in Rio, and who seem to be principal objects of attack, do not always relish it; so that the intendant of the police published an edital, declaring, that as the sport during the intruso had been productive of wounds and blows, and was often exercised against the will and wishes of the parties, it was strictly prohibited in the streets and at the theatre, as a thing not to be permitted in a "civilized society." Guards, therefore, were placed in all parts of the town; but the "sociedade civilizada" of Rio paid no respect to them, and they also at length joined in the national amusement. And, indeed, it was not to be expected that they would act otherwise, as the emperor himself set the example. He is so fond of it, that he played at it the whole of the intruso, with his children and friends.

I made several inquiries as to the origin of this strange custom, but nobody had the smallest idea. As a ceremony connected with a religious observance, I imagine bedewing the person with water, must have had its origin in some allusion to baptism. With the exception

of this sport, and the opera, there is no other which the Brazilians indulge in during the carnival. There were no masques, or any similar exhibition.

On the quarta feira de Cinza, on Ash Wednesday, a very imposing display took place. The ecclesiastics of an order of Franciscans exhibited, in procession, effigies of all the men eminent for piety and sanctity which their order had produced. It commenced at five o'clock in the evening, from the church of the Misericordia, and extended for a mile through the Rua Direita. It consisted of large platforms, supported on poles, on each of which stood several images, as large as life, representing the different pious actions of the holy persons. Each platform was, in fact, a small stage, on which effigies, as large as human figures, dressed in exact costumes, and in different attitudes, represented real scenes. Some of these stages had so many figures, and were so heavy, that they required ten or twelve men, dressed in black robes, to support them; and there were above thirty exhibited.

Before each marched a number of children, decorated in the most fantastic manner, and led by monks; they were intended to represent angels. They had all short petticoats,

expanded almost horizontally by hoops, like the old court dresses, and their wings consisted of gauzes of different colours, stretched on circles of cane or bamboo, which compassed them round for several yards. Their hair was profusely pomatumed, powdered, and curled; their cheeks painted bright red; and in their hands, they carried silver wands, surmounted with broad labels, intimating the saint whose guardian angels they were. The train was closed by a group supporting a canopy, under which walked the superior of the order, surrounded by lighted lanterns on poles, and followed by a military band. The ponderous procession took three hours in marching up to the convent of S. Antonio, where it terminated.

This display, as a worthy ecclesiastic told me, was intended for the edification of the multitude; but, I am sorry to say, the multitude seemed but little edified by it. When any sacred figure looked grotesque, which it must be confessed some of them did, it excited shouts of laughter among the crowd, as soon as it appeared opposite them; the very gravity and solemnity of some of them, with cowls and crucifixes, only seemed to afford matter of ridicule to the mob, particularly the people of colour, who appeared to think the jubilee not

yet over, and that this solemn ceremony was only a part of it. Indeed, I thought it strongly resembled some of those religious processions which I saw revived in France, after the disuse into which they were fallen during the Revolution; all the solemnity once attached to such things, seemed completely to have passed away from the minds of the multitude.

March 12, was the procession of the image of our Lord to the Misericordia, a ceremony always attended by the court. The image lay in the palace chapel, used as a cathedral. It was a large platform, surmounted with a canopy, and surrounded with curtains. Inside was a figure as large as life, bending under the weight of a cross, which protruded out behind.

About eight o'clock, a number of persons entered the church, and one of them humbly kneeling down close beside me, placed his shoulder under the pole of the platform, and lifted it up. It was of considerable weight, and required no small muscular exertion; and while I looked in the face of the strong man who supported it, I perceived he was the Emperor. It had been the practice of his father to the latest hour in Brazil to bear on his shoulders this cross through the streets of Rio, an example which his son closely follows in every

ceremonial act of devotion. The ministers placed themselves under the other poles, and the ponderous catafalk was raised with difficulty from the pedestal on which it stood, and proceeded out of the church while the organ pealed, the choir shouted aloud an anthem, and the military band at the door struck up a solemn march. A number of torch-bearers formed a long lane, through which the procession moved to the church of the Misericordia.

Here the floor was covered with the richest carpets, filled with ladies in the gayest attire, sitting on the ground in the Moorish fashion, except a lane up which the procession passed and deposited the catafalk on a pedestal near the altar. In laying it down, the puny supporters seemed to sink under it, leaving the whole weight on the emperor, who supported it like an Atlas; but in depositing it, his hand was caught under it, where it remained wedged like Milo's, and he only extricated it with the loss of the skin. While wrapping his handkerchief round it, some of the supporters came up to kiss the wounded hand; but whether the emperor was displeased with their want of strength, or want of due attention, he pushed it rather roughly in their faces and left the chapel. The crowd seemed greatly amused at this. The

friars who held the tapers laughed outright, and all the congregation followed the example, even to the moleques or blacks. No precaution was taken to exclude the mob. Close to the emperor, and pressing upon him, were blacks and whites, freemen and slaves, rich and poor, without distinction of persons, to which certainly no attention is paid in any religious ceremony; but the whole was conducted with the levity of a puppet-show, and without the slightest regard to solemnity or decorum.

The 19th was distinguished as a festival of high importance, and, next to Sunday, the most solemn holiday recognized, I believe, in the Brazilian church. This was the day of São José, St. Joseph, the spouse of Mary and earthly father of Jesus. All the public offices were closed, as well as the museum and public library; and all the people were walking in groups about the streets, in their best clothes, while a succession of rockets was discharged. In the evening solemn service was performed in the church of the saint, and in several others. I went to that of S. Pedro.

The chapel within was brilliantly and indeed elegantly lighted up with a vast number of large wax tapers, in bright silver sconces, and in the

centre a large glittering lustre; round the chapel festoons of roses, and other rich artificial flowers, were suspended from light to light with great elegance, and the walls were hung with drapery of gold and silver brocade. The whole taste and genius of the Brazilians seem to be expended in their chapels; and they excel in those pretty decorations. The altar was formed of a pyramid of lighted tapers, ascending to the roof; and on the summit stood the figures of Joseph and Mary, holding by the hand between them the child. They were all splendidly attired. A priest, dressed in a short rochet and scarlet tippet, suddenly entered the church, and hastily mounted the pulpit, and without prayer or text began abruptly his sermon, to which one half of the congregation listened, while the other was amused with the music and fire-works at the door. He looked up, and addressed himself entirely to the figure of Joseph, whom he often appealed to as "O grande patriarca."

Quinta de Endoenças, or Holy Thursday, is distinguished by a ceremony practised with great humility and undeviating regularity by the late king, and followed by the present emperor, with the same duty as he has observed all other ceremonies, of which his father set the example. This was washing the feet of the beggars. On

the day before, the poor men, selected for the purpose, were decently clothed, and walked about through the different churches, where large silver vases were laid out on the steps of the altar, as if preparatory to the same ceremony. When they came to have their feet washed, they were placed on a bench with three seats; on the highest they sat, on the second their feet rested, and on the lowest the emperor knelt with a towel, and went through that semblance of humiliation. Dom John had brought with him a magnificent service of rich old plate, which is always displayed on this occasion.

Holy Thursday is also distinguished by another remarkable ceremony, the consecration and exposure of the host. The light of day is excluded from all the churches, which are illuminated inside with wax tapers, and the host is exposed on the high altar of every one, in the midst of the blaze. Two men stand in robes of red or purple silk beside the altar, as guards to watch it. In some churches I saw the effigy of the body of our Saviour laid under a small cloister, and his hand exposed, which the crowd kissed, depositing money on a silver dish beside it at the same time. During the whole of the day, the explosion of rockets, and the ringing of bells are prohibited. As

substitutes, they use a black board, with two coffin handles loosely attached, on each side. This a man holds by a loop at one end, and turning it quickly round, the handles rattle against the board with an incessant and teazing sound, which is continued all day and night. When I inquired why this implement was now employed, I was informed it was intended to perform the office of a bell, the louder sound of which might disturb the repose of our Saviour.

The night of this day is a promenade of all the people in the city. They put on their best clothes, and the streets are filled, till morning, with well-dressed groups; and as it always falls on a season of moonlight, and the weather is generally fine, it is an enjoyment of which every one partakes. The time is enlivened by the amendoa, or presents, which are sent about, and are so called, because they were originally formed of almonds; in process of time it became a general name for a present of every kind, and a negro at any time asks for his amendoa, when he expects a little money. Holy Thursday with us is called Maundy Thursday, and similar presents are made to the poor. Some derive the word maundy from mande, the basket in which the gift was sent; others from mandatum, as the day in which the great command

of "love one other" is practised; but it appears to me to have its origin in this amendoa. All day these presents are seen going from house to house, wrapped up in napkins, and some times carried in coaches; but at night they are displayed in a more interesting manner.

The night of Holy Thursday is the time devoted to female slaves, during which they are permitted and encouraged to make up amendoas, and dispose of them for their own profit; and at the door or passage leading to every church is a market established, where they are sold. Here the poor girls, dressed in their best clothes, and decked out in their simple ornaments, display their confectionery, sometimes on tables covered with napkins, sometimes on the ground with lighted candles. It consists of almond comfits in conical bags, or in paper baskets neatly cut and painted, and sometimes of little figures of frosted sugar, of different characters and costumes, having their insides filled with a variety of good things. These figures generally sell for two patacs, or about 2*s.* 6*d.* each, and I never purchased any thing with more pleasure, than at this "holy fair," so humanely instituted to promote the industry and profit of poor female slaves. It is one of the many little institutions which mark the good and kindly traits of the

Brazilian character; and it almost smoothed the rough and hideous aspect of slavery, to see so many in a state of bondage on this night so neatly dressed, so cheerful, and apparently so happy.

Sexta da Paixão, or Good Friday, was ushered in, in solemn silence. No explosion of cannon, no ringing of bells, no discharge of sky-rockets. The only sound we heard, was the dull and dismal minute-guns from the French admiral's ship in the harbour, in funereal honour of the day. At one o'clock I went to see a parochial ceremony, in which the body of our Saviour was carried round the parish, accompanied by solemn music; but in the evening was the grandest exhibition to be seen in the Catholic church. It was held in that of Terceiros, near the palace, where I repaired at seven o'clock.

The church was nearly dark and full of people. A large purple curtain was drawn across the chancel, and presently a preacher ascended the pulpit, and began a very eloquent sermon on the crucifixion. After detailing the cause of Christ's death, arising from our offences, and the manner of it the most painful and ignominious, he suddenly said, "behold the Saviour you have murdered," and immediately the curtain drew, like as at the commencement

of a tragedy, and exhibited all the persons inside who were to act the religious drama. The chancel was hung with black, and splendidly lighted up, with glittering silver chandeliers. Below was a rich mausoleum, on which lay the effigy of Christ. On each side stood figures with long beards, representing the disciples, richly but grotesquely dressed. In front was a band of Roman soldiers, with gilt helmets and breastplates, and a standard, with S P Q R worked in the centre, and in advance stood the centurion, an enormous bluff man, having a huge black beard, and looking so fierce that some of the women hid their faces.

A procession was then formed, which marched into the street; first, two enormous candelabra, holding corresponding wax tapers as large as bed-posts; next a man bearing a black cross, over which hung white drapery forming the letter M, which I observed was displayed on all devices, and stood as the initial of Mary. Then followed the usual line of wax torch-bearers, forming a very long and broad lane, through which a number of children were led as angels, having wings of geese on their shoulders, hoop petticoats, faces rouged, and hair powdered, and over their heads large calashes of coloured silk, so that they resembled so many little irises moving in

rainbows. They all carried in their hands some emblematic device; one the nails, another the hammer, a third the sponge, a fourth the spear, a fifth the ladder, and last of all came one larger than the rest with a cock.

You are not aware, perhaps, that the Brazilians possess the descendant of the very cock, that crew when Peter denied his master, which was often pointed out to me. I was surprised one morning at a very extraordinary sound, which proceeded from a yard not far from our house, which I discerned was the crowing of a cock. It was a creature of an extraordinary figure, immensely tall, almost all legs and thighs, with a very small body, and when he erected himself to crow, was as long as a crane; but he was particularly distinguished by his song. At the conclusion of his crow, when other cocks ceased their note, he prolonged it into a very dismal croak, which had a monitory sound. One of our Brazilian servants then informed me, that it was the breed of the cock that crowed to Peter, and that this lengthened and dreary note was intended, as an additional warning and reproach to him for what he had done.

The procession closed with the bier, preceded by sundry mourners, with their heads enveloped in white and black hoods, and followed by the

apostles, soldiers, and centurion, then a group of angels, and lastly the Virgin herself; whom, by an anachronism, they represent as young as the same figure in a procession of the nativity, not remembering that thirty-two years had elapsed, which should make some difference in a female face; a full band playing a solemn dirge, and the regiment, in companies, with reversed arms and the officers in mourning, terminated the whole.

In this grand procession were 800 persons, more than half of whom carried wax torches, and continued to move through the streets for two hours. While on their march, a dark cloud gathered over them, which discharged exceedingly vivid lightning, accompanied with very loud thunder, and gave something of a real solemnity to the display. This was followed by a deluge of rain, under which the immense crowd stood bare-headed, and the procession moved slowly on, as if on the finest day.

The season of Lent concluded with Sabbado de Alleluia, or Hallelujah Saturday. This is also called Judas-day, from the very conspicuous figure he makes, and the vengeance which the people exercise on him. It is generally said to be like the exhibition of Guy Faux in England, but it does not bear to it

the slightest resemblance. It was originally intended as a solemnity, similar to the other religious processions, but it is now a scene of fun and drollery, and made the vehicle of conveying general and particular satire, and certainly exhibits a most curious and interesting display of Brazilian manners and modes of thinking.

On proceeding to town about ten o'clock, we saw the principal streets filled with different figures, some suspended on trees, some erected on poles, all admirably dressed, as large as life, and in high character, forming different groups, or single, and connected with others at a distance, and all labelled underneath with verses, indicating what they were intended to represent. The principal figures were Judas and the devil, with a variety of dragons and serpents, filled with fire-works, intended to communicate one with the other, and explode in succession. At the meeting of four streets, was a gigantic Satan, surrounded by imps, all turned to the unfortunate Judas, on whom they were to rush at a given signal, and carry him off in a flame of fire.

Besides the figure of Judas, which was varied in many ways, and surrounded by different infernal agents, there was a variety of others,

which had no reference to his punishment; some, which had no connexion with him at all, and these contained either general or particular satire. One was directed against women. It was a large cat, looking very demure, and under it a label, read with great amusement by some gentlemen in one window, to some ladies in the opposite :—

" A cat I be—or he or she
No matter—one case clearly made is;
In will to scratch, I fairly match
With any here, among the ladies.*"

Another was directed against men. It was the figure of a Roman soldier, with a lantern, with which he seemed to be searching for somebody. Under him was the following label :—

" My name it is Mark, and I walk in the dark,
But I hold up my lantern to view
If you be the traitor, or if there be greater
Among these good people than you.†"

There were also some, of which the satire was not general, but directed to particular persons. There was one figure extremely well

Serei gato ou serei gata
Serei o que vos quizereis,
Porem sou na arranhadura
Bem semelhante as mulheres."

Sou Marcos, vou de lanterne
Sem luz para assim ver bem,
Se tu sõ seras o Judas
Ou se he Judas mais alguem."

dressed, as a desembargador, or advocate. He was a very grave and plausible-looking figure, in black, with a cocked-hat, long beard, and spectacles; and he held in his hand a book, which he seemed to be intently reading. It was placed directly before the door of a noted desembargador, not much esteemed for his honesty, and was exactly like him. Underneath was the following label, which was read with delight by the crowd:—

"A garb so sage, not always proves
That honesty is found within;
His present meditation moves
On some deep roguery—I ween."

Before the door of an English merchant, were two figures, that exactly resembled him and his wife. They were serious people, and their dress was imitated, particularly the lady's cap, which was a fac simile of the one she wore; she appeared at the window, and certainly nothing could be more correct than the likeness. They had incurred the wrath of the Brazilians, I was told, because they had exclaimed against this exhibition as popish idolatry, and particularly because they had declined to contribute any thing towards it;

Este Festo grave e serio
Naõ enculca probidade;
Pois talvez que agora pense
N'alguma perversidade.

and were, I believe, the only English in the street who refused. The labels, though very droll, were intranslatable, and the manner in which they were exhibited, was of a humour too coarse to describe.

We took our station in a window of the Rua Direita; it commanded an admirable view of the whole street, which I will more particularly describe, to convey to you an idea of what passed in all the rest. The broad street, for a considerable length, was lined on each side with palm trees, which formed a very pretty avenue. From the trunk of one tree to another, were drawn cords, concealed in wreaths of flowers, which were intended as cordons, behind which the spectators stood. From the opposite balconies were similar cords, also covered with wreaths of flowers, crossing in the middle, from which hung down painted vases, of different shapes and sizes, having something inside, which set conjecture to work. Between these suspended vases, were great varieties of figures, of various devices, labelled, very well dressed, and highly in character; the whole forming a promenade, filled with silent masqueraders, exceedingly amusing. Among these, the most lofty and conspicuous was Judas. He was hanging from the branch of

a high tree, dressed in white robes; and above him, lying perdue among the branches, and ready to pounce down upon him, was Satan.

The service of the day began in the churches, and when it arrived at that part where Hallelujah is first chanted, it is notified by a discharge of rockets from the street. This is the signal for the sport every where to begin; immediately the bells ring, the bands strike up, and the explosion commences.

First, Satan descends rapidly from the top of the tree, seizes upon the hanging body of Judas, and both are in a moment in flames. Curious fire-works, in succession, play about their limbs; and at length, according to the verse on the label under him, the belly of Judas bursts open, and all the contents are scattered about, which the mob seize on as trophies, and the remainder of the figures disappear in a blaze. Next, the English figures took fire, and exhibited vagaries, which I cannot well describe, turning round to each other on a wheel, in a very curious manner. In this way, in succession, all the figures were ignited, and performed various evolutions, according to their characters, till they were all consumed.

The space in the middle of the street was then cleared, and several knights on horseback,

attended by squires, issued forth, armed with lances. After parading up and down the lists, they took their stand at a barrier at the end of the street. On a signal given, the barrier fell, and one of the knights ran tilt at a suspended vase with his spear; he burst it open, and out fell a sucking pig; the crowd rushed forward, and the first who could seize the squeaking prize, kept it. The second knight ran tilt at another, and out fell a monkey; the crowd hastened to seize him, but jacko was too nimble, and escaped along the cord into our window. All the vases were thus broken in succession, and there came out a large lizard, a cat, and sundry other things; but there yet remained one vase, on which all eyes were turned, and none of the knights seemed disposed to attack it. At length, one more hardy than the rest, rushed at it, and escaped for his life. When it was broken, there issued out a swarm of moribundos, or large hornets, who covered us like a cloud, darting at every one near them with the fiercest anger. The entire street was now full of waving white handkerchiefs, every one defending his face from half a dozen of these assailants.

During the whole of the exhibition, the police attended, and the intendant rode up and down in full uniform; but there seemed no

occasion for their interference. The mob were very merry, but very orderly. No one seemed disposed to offend another in all their scrambles, except when, now and then, a poor negro wandered into the middle of the street, and he was kicked and cuffed without mercy, as if he was a thing altogether out of the pale of pity or consideration. About one o'clock the scene closed. The mob, as elsewhere, commenced the work of destruction on what remained; the trees were pulled down, the remains of the figures seized as trophies, and the streets, from one end to the other, strewed with fragments of the pageant.

The exhibition, which is really very amusing, and ingeniously got up, is singularly attractive to the Brazilians, and is growing more so every day, as, except the processions, and the opera which is very exclusive, they have no public recreation. There is much in it that retains the coarseness of the old comedy, and the acting of some of the figures was like those of the Dutch harlequin and the windmill, on which the ladies of Rio, like those of Rotterdam, looked with great satisfaction and amusement. The different streets vie with each other in the richness and variety of their display; and it was not decided, before I left, whether the Quitanda or Direita was entitled to the palm. The whole

expense, which is defrayed by general subscription, amounted to twelve contos of reis, of which the Rua Direita expended four, which, reckoning the milrei at a dollar, as the Brazilians always do, would give nearly 1000*l.* as the expense of one street.

At four o'clock in the morning of Easter Sunday, the city was roused by a discharge of rockets in the air, and cannon from the fortresses, intending to announce, by the lighting of the fire, and by the thunder of the artillery, the glad tidings of the resurrection of our Lord; and immediately after, the Comforter he promised to send, was seen exhibited in different parts of the city. On my way to church, at eleven o'clock, I saw people just erecting it on a long pole, like a may-pole, painted, and decorated with ribands and wreaths. On the summit was a broad red flag, expanded like a vane, and turning with the wind. In the midst of rays, which issued from the centre, was the Dove descending from the sky. Similar emblems were erected in the Campo d'Acclamação, and other public places. In their visible representations of the incidents of Scripture, they do not seem to attend much to the order of time; and events, I have observed, were anticipated, and often confounded together.

From this time till Whitsunday, a very singular custom was established. A boy, the son of a shopkeeper, was elected emperor of the Holy Spirit. He kept a little court, was splendidly dressed, and his father's house became the rendezvous to all people, who assembled to pay their homage at the levee of this young spiritual monarch. It is a high gratification, but an expensive one, to the parents of the child, who keeps open house to all comers, and, during his reign, exercises a kind of papal authority; he directs the service of the church, and is consulted by the clergy as to the time of performing it.

On Easter Tuesday, collections are made for the Holy Spirit, and processions walk the city for that purpose. They consist of men dressed in red robes, bearing red flags, silver plates, and silk bags. The flags have a dove embroidered in the centre, with rays issuing from it. This the bearer waves as he walks along, presenting it to all he meets to kiss, particularly to negroes. Every body who kisses it, deposits money in the bag or plate. It is sometimes held up to windows, where ladies tie ribands, and decorate it with other ornaments. A band of music accompanies the procession, and they seem very merry.

The whole of this series of procession and display was quite new to me, and, therefore, I have described them, though I am aware that similar exhibitions take place in Europe. The impression, however, formerly made by these visible representations of sacred events, seem entirely worn away, and they are treated by the spectators with a levity almost profane. It is the opinion of some, that they will soon fall into entire disuse, or degenerate into ludicrous exhibitions, like those of Judas-day, which is every year increasing in interest and attraction for the people here; and certainly it is a very singular and amusing spectacle.

About this time despatches were received from Pernambuco, which threw the city into considerable agitation. The people of this district seem never to have abandoned the revolutionary project they had conceived and endeavoured to execute in 1817. Notwithstanding the severity then exercised, another attempt was made, some time after, too unimportant to merit a particular detail, but evincing that the spirit was still unsubdued. They were among the first to acknowledge the emperor's title to the throne of Brazil, and the entire separation of the country from Portugal; but they still cherished the hope of establishing a separate state for them-

selves. Sundry jealousies existed between that district and Rio de Janeiro, and petty causes of discontent were subjects of continued irritation between them. Among the rest, the Pernambucans complained that a tax was levied on them to light the streets of Rio, while their own were left in total darkness.

On the night of the 1st of February, 1829, about seventy men assembled in the vicinity, and seizing some horses on the road, they mounted them, and entered S. Antonio as a troop of cavalry, deposed the authorities established there, and proclaimed a provisional government; circulating at the same time, and affixing to all the public places, pasquinades of the most abusive kind against the person and government of the emperor. They then invited the camera of the municipality to join them, but they refused to interfere, and in general the people, though not indisposed to the object of the insurgents, declined to commit themselves in a perilous attempt, where the means seemed so insufficient to obtain the end. Meantime, the military stationed at Reciffe, amounting to about 300, were joined by the police, and they marched into S. Antonio; but the insurgents, finding themselves unsupported, retired before them, dispersed, and took refuge in the Mato.

The circumstances of this petty and abortive revolutionary movement, were not in themselves of sufficient importance to excite any serious apprehension; but they were connected with others of apparently more consequence. It was rumoured that a similar and simultaneous movement had taken place at Maranhão. The known state of the province was very alarming. It is so distant from the capital, that some of the frontier towns of the interior cannot communicate with it in less than a year; and at Tabatinga, news from Rio is frequently brought round Cape Horn, and so from the coast across the Andes. This renders the influence of the imperial government comparatively weak; while the vicinity of the republican provinces holds out strong seductions to follow their example. In the extensive woods of the district, is a number of fugitive slaves who live in a state of independence; and such is the known dislike of the people of Maranhão to any modification of the old government, that they had rather rely on the co-operation of those lawless fugitives that submit to it. It was now rumoured that the insurgents, joined by those blacks, had entered the capital, and put the governor, a French emigrant, to death; and though it was immediately after known that he

had put an end to his own life in a fit of derangement, the alarm did not at all subside.

The first effect was felt in the currency, which, like the funds in England, is a kind of political barometer. Copper, the only metal in circulation, which had borne a discount of 32 per cent., next day rose to 45; and even at that enormous premium, people were unwilling to give it in exchange for bank paper. The soldiers of the garrison began to express discontent, and alarm was secretly spreading.

To meet the immediate emergency, an edital was issued, signed by M. Calmon, minister of finance, to sell out of the treasury 1000 quilates of diamonds; and in the meantime several energetic proclamations were issued by the emperor. The first states, that the usual formalities which secured the rights of individuals should be suspended, in order to proceed with more effect against the culpable; the second, that military tribunals should proceed summarily against all taken with arms in their hands; and the third, that sentence should be executed without waiting for the emperor's signature.

To provide the means of carrying into effect these energetic measures in Rio, a new gallows was erected at the water-side, near the Trapiche de Francisco. The last persons executed here

were Mehowich, a Maltese; Lourinho, an European Portuguese; and John William Radcliffe, born in Portugal, of English parents, who had all been concerned in the last insurrection at Pernambuco. Radcliffe was a professed infidel, and had written on the walls of his prison many reveries, in which his opinions were stated. After their death, the instrument by which they suffered was taken down; but on passing through the place where it had stood, I saw some men completing a new one, the morning after the news arrived; they had been set to work in the night, and at day-light the people saw the gallows before their doors, where it seemed to be now placed in terrorem.

Another event occurred, which contributed not a little to the annoyance of the people of Rio. The unfortunate attempt to blockade the Rio de la Plata had involved the Brazilian government with the European powers, and the English, French, and Americans, had made pressing demands for seizure and detention of their ships. The two latter had been settled, and the Americans had received bills for the amount at six, twelve, and eighteen months, the first of which had become due, and was actually paid. The demands of the English alone, to the extent of 470,000*l.*, remained unsatisfied.

Lord Ponsonby had, pursuant to his instructions, been very pressing in his representations, and a circumstance just after occurred, which excited in no small degree the alarm and anger of the Brazilians.

Orders, it was said, were sent to the British admiral, to sail at the end of thirty days, if before that time the required satisfaction was not made, to blockade the harbour, and to seize every Brazilian vessel that entered. The admiral did sail at the specified time, taking with him not only the Thetis and Tribune frigates, but also the North Star, which had arrived but a day or two before from the coast of Africa. The wind was foul, but all the boats in the squadron were ordered out, and the admiral was seen, with nine boats a-head, making his way to his station. As I walked along the shore, the Brazilians were collected in groups, looking intently on his progress, and I found the town in a high state of excitement. I met a man whom I knew, who was looking out at the squadron in great agitation; he turned suddenly to me, and said—"We must seize all your ships in our harbour, confiscate all your property in the country, and fit out our merchantmen as privateers to cruise against your commerce in other places." The man, I found,

spoke the sentiment of the citizens. I next day paid a visit to the Bishop of Rio; he was in the act of signing several state papers, as president of the senate, preparatory to its meeting. The good man seemed in a considerable state of alarm. He asked me if the English were not preparing all to depart immediately from the country, and it was with some difficulty I could persuade him that it was not the case.

The cause assigned for all this by the Brazilians, was something truly characteristic of the people. Our former minister, Mr. Gordon, had had some difference with the emperor on the subject of a house at Bota Fogo, in which, as I have heard, the emperor was decidedly wrong; a warm discussion ensued, and Mr. Gordon, conscious of his right, expressed himself with a becoming and independent spirit. When he was succeeded by Lord Ponsonby, the emperor inquired what countryman the new minister was, and on being informed he was an Irishman, he said, he "was glad he had not again to encounter a proud Scotsman." This story was now revived, and it was circulated everywhere that the English minister for foreign affairs had taken the present measures of hostility, as a mode of avenging a family quarrel! I mention this as a proof of the credulity of

these people, and the extreme absurdity of angry men.

It was remarked that the French, on this occasion, gave their prompt assistance to tow out the British squadron, and it was shrewdly suspected that they were well pleased at the prospect of a rupture between England and Brazil, and readily lent their aid to accelerate it. It was with some disappointment, therefore, they saw the squadron again return in amity. Whatever the intentions of the admiral were, he met no ships to seize while he was out, and the immediate proposal of the Brazilian government for a satisfactory adjustment of the affair, put an end to all further necessity for coercive measures.

Another circumstance which at this time increased the embarrassment of the people, was the exceeding depreciation of bank paper. It was stated by the minister of finance that the discount on copper, silver, and gold, which in the year before was 20, 48, and 100 per cent., was now raised to 40, 80, and 190; and the exchange, which was then at 32, was now fallen to 20. This was attributed by him to the excessive quantity of the notes in circulation. It was, therefore, determined to withdraw a sufficient number, and this was carried into

effect by the very summary process of burning them. The bank stands beside the custom-house, in the Rua Direita. As I was one morning passing by, I saw two large blazing pitch barrels placed in front, and a wide semicircle of soldiers surrounding them; between them was a large office table covered with bundles of bank notes, bound with red tape. Two clerks now came forward, and taking the bundles in succession, they flourished them over their heads, and then dropped them deliberately into the flames; in this way 400 contos of reis were consumed in a moment, and this process I saw more than once repeated.

Some unfortunate people who did not seem aware what was going on, wandered into the magic circle, in their way along the street, and approached too near the precious barrels; they were immediately attacked by the soldiers, first kicked and cuffed, and then taken into custody. I learned, on inquiry, that on former occasions several bundles of these notes had been abstracted before they were consumed; and my informant showed me a house, in the Rua d'Alfandega, erected by a man who was known to have carried off a fortune in this way, and it was, therefore, called the paper house.

One more circumstance was added to increase

at the time the general embarrassment. While the recollection of the alarm created by the Portuguese troops on a former occasion, and the more recent terror excited by the German and Irish foreign soldiers, were fresh in the minds of the Brazilians, news arrived that all the Portuguese in England were about to embark, and the country be inundated with a fresh army of foreigners, whom the people held in such unconquerable prejudice and dislike. The emperor was greatly embarrassed. They were the very men who had sacrificed every thing for his daughter and his constitution, yet he had not resolution to encounter the resentment of his easily excited subjects in Brazil, at a time and on a subject in which they were particularly sensitive; he therefore came to the determination of submitting the affair to the legislative body, and to that end called them together a month earlier than usual. In the mean time it appeared that the troops intended for Brazil, were to be sent to Terceira, and this fact was gladly announced, as removing a serious cause of embarrassment, before the meeting of the chambers; but on the 28th, only four days before the appointed meeting, the packet arrived, bringing intelligence of the unfortunate issue of the attempted landing at Terceira, and that the

emigrants were compelled by British frigates to abandon the enterprise; and the accounts given in the English papers were extracted into those of Brazil, with the severest comments.

The circumstance which rendered the Brazilians so susceptible on this subject, in which otherwise they felt little interest, was, that the emigrants which they had with high gratification supposed to be otherwise disposed of, were now of necessity thrown on the country, and they could not conceal their vexation. When, therefore, it was announced and circulated a few days after, that the French had given them an asylum, and were about to land them on the island, they could not conceal their exultation, not only at the disposal of the emigrants, but at the prospect of bringing the two nations into collision, not for a moment reflecting, that the sailing of a hostile force from the shores of England, was the only reason why England interfered, and that if any other nation chose to convey them, England had nothing to do with it. It was quite amusing to hear the speculations of the worthy people of Rio, who are all profound politicians, on this subject, at the same time that it was a matter of regret, that so

many causes of estrangement should have occurred to render them less friendly and well disposed to us.

The day appointed by the constitution for the meeting of the legislative body is the 3d of May in each year, unless for some special cause, when it may be convoked earlier. This cause had now occurred, and in consequence of the expected arrival of these emigrants, and other reasons, it was directed to assemble on the 1st of April. It is necessary, however, that one-half of each chamber should be present to constitute a sitting, and that was not the case at the appointed time; the state of the roads, from the prevalence of rains, had rendered the communications with the distant provinces difficult and tedious, and a sufficient number of deputies had not arrived, so the chamber did not assemble on that inauspicious day. A deputation had waited on the emperor to apprise him of the circumstance, and he appointed Thursday the 2d, at one o'clock, P. M. It does not appear from any direction in the constitutional code, in which house the members are to assemble; it only provides that both the chambers shall be united at the opening and closing of the session, and the members take

their seats indiscriminately; and a deputy informed me, the emperor might convoke them at his palace, or at any place he chose.

The senate-house has been hitherto the place of assembling, and on this day also it was appointed for the purpose. The constitution directs, that the meeting of both chambers respectively shall be open to the public, and galleries are provided for their accommodation; but in special cases it is necessary to have tickets, and that was now ordered. Besides the public gallery there is a private one, reserved for the foreign diplomatic body, and by courtesy we were all invited, and particular tickets for the purpose were sent to each of the persons attached to the legations. When we received ours, we were surprised and gratified to find the cards of admission to the senate of Brazil, were decorated with embossed wreaths, in which the rose, shamrock, and thistle were entwined, and we thought it a delicate compliment to our mission, to have the arms of our nation displayed on our tickets. The good people of Brazil, however, do not yet understand such refinement. The cards, I was told, were purchased at an English shop in the Rua Direita, and by the same accident all the missions had this same device.

The senate-house stands on the west side of the Campo d'Acclamação. It was originally a private house, built under peculiar circumstances. In 1818, when the insurrection broke out at Pernambuco, the governor of Bahia had accurate information of what was going forward in his own city, and the names of several who were implicated with the revolutionists; and when the disturbances were suppressed, he had in his power some of the most opulent persons of the province, many of whom were imprisoned at Bahia. To extricate themselves from the perilous prosecutions which impended over them, they advanced, it is said, large sums of money, and built for the governor a splendid palace in the Campo d'Acclamação at Rio. This he afterwards disposed of to government for the use of the senate, and the revolutionary merchants of Bahia have at least the consolation to know, that their money erected this constitutional edifice.

This house is a building with two fronts of two stories, having nine windows in each, closed with Venetian blinds. It was quite fresh, and neat with paint and whitewash, but without any architectural ornament, except a shallow cornice, supported by two pilasters at each end, and urn-shaped flower pots on the parapet,

THE OPENING OF THE SENATE HOUSE.

which were really flower pots filled with living plants; the Brazilians having no idea of making any member in a building, without applying it to its apparent use. The whole was covered with plaster, washed yellow and green, and had a gaudy tawdry look, not befitting the gravity of the sage assembly for which it was designed. Close beside it is a quarry of the finest building stone perhaps in the world; and some solid building will be erected in process of time befitting its appropriation. A grand edifice of hewn granite, in this vast square, surrounded with its magnificent accessories of lofty mountains and hanging woods, and receiving within it the legislative body of a mighty nation, would certainly be a noble spectacle.

As we approached, the way was lined with carriages at each side, forming a lane; but the circumstance which struck us was the few spectators, and that a spectacle so interesting, and as yet so novel to the people of the country, should have excited so little interest. With the exception of idle blacks scampering about, and the attendants of the senate, we did not see in the square above one hundred persons. We afterwards found that the whole interest of the people was absorbed by the chamber of

deputies, where it was excited to an intense degree.

Having ascended a staircase, we entered a salooned antechamber. The etiquette required, that on this occasion we should go full dressed; and I had on my gown and ecclesiastical habiliments. Not knowing where to go from the saloon, I asked an attendant, who immediately said, "Aqui, Senhor;—Here, Sir;" and leading the way, ushered us into the body of the chamber, where we found ourselves in the midst of the senators. Many of them were ecclesiastics, in the habit of their rank and order; and it seems they had taken me for one of the members, and so sent me into the midst of them; we escaped from the gaze of the people, and ascending a stair behind the throne, found ourselves in our gallery. The hall was small, as it was intended only to accommodate fifty persons, the number of the senate. A double row of chairs were placed round it, on which sat the members of the senate and deputies, all in full dress of their respective professions, but having no particular costume as senators or deputies. The ministers had merely embroidered blue coats, and the ecclesiastics gowns and robes; of the latter, there seemed a great number present. At one end of the hall was the throne, just under where

we sat; and at the other the gallery for spectators. At a table, covered with green velvet, sat three deputies with a silver cup before them, in which they were receiving ballots for members, to form a deputation to meet the emperor when he should arrive. While this was going on, they all sat down with great silence and decorum. When it was over, they all stood up and buzzed about, as in the House of Commons, before the speaker takes the chair.

Just as the clock struck one, we heard the sound of trumpets and the trampling of horses, announcing the emperor's arrival, attended by his guard of honour. The members retained their places but not their seats; and in a few minutes the deputation appeared at the lower door. They marched up, ranging themselves at each side of the hall, and the emperor entered, and passed up between them. He was dressed in large jack-boots, which ascended over the knees of his white breeches, with a long green velvet robe, spangled with golden stars, the cape of which was formed of the bright yellow feathers of the toucan, part of the costume of the ancient caciques of the country. The train was long and supported by pages. On his head was the imperial Brazilian crown,

whose form was an inverted cone, the small end being below and scarcely covering his forehead, like an Armenian calpac, ribbed with gold. In his hand he carried a gilded pole, full as long and as thick as the ancient constable's staff, and surmounted by a golden griffin, the device of the family of Braganza. In the street, on horseback, or in an open carriage, he has the air and port of a gentleman; but the habiliments he was encumbered with were so very unbecoming, that they seem exceedingly unfavourable to a dignified demeanour. As he advanced up the hall, he fixed his eye for a moment intently on our gallery, and certainly with no very kind or cordial expression.

When seated on his throne, a secretary, who had preceded him with a velvet case on a cushion, now laid the case before him. He opened it, and took out two sheets of paper, one of which contained his written speech. He held his gilded staff at arms length in one hand, and the sheet of paper in the other, hemmed twice, and began to read his speech. He said he had called the chambers together before the usual time for two reasons:—First, because he expected the arrival of the Portuguese troops in Brazil; and, secondly, because he wished that prompt attention should be paid to the

finances of the country. One cause had ceased to exist, as the troops were not now likely to leave Europe, but the other was still very pressing. He therefore earnestly recommended the subject to their consideration, and begged to remind them, it was the *fourth* time he had done so without effect. This last sentence he pronounced with a strong and particular emphasis, which seemed to excite no small sensation among the members, who all looked at each other in the most significant manner. He then said the sitting was closed, and rose to depart, and looking up to our gallery, bowed with more appearance of cordiality than at his entrance. The whole time of his remaining in the chamber did not exceed ten minutes. The space under the gallery, like that below the bar of the House of Lords, was filled with spectators after he had entered, and he had to squeeze his way, with some difficulty, through the crowd as he went out. He then retired to a dressing room, and descended to his carriage in a rich uniform. There was no emotion of any kind displayed among the people when he appeared; he came and went with as much indifference as any one of the crowd. His carriage was a chariot, the panels being a gold ground, enamelled with

flowers and armorial bearings, like the body of our Lord Mayor's coach. He was escorted by his guard of honour, composed of the citizens of Rio, and he dashed off at a gallop, while the few people collected looked quietly on, and showed not the smallest spark of sensibility, either by shouts or groans, which would have been displayed by an English mob on such an occasion.

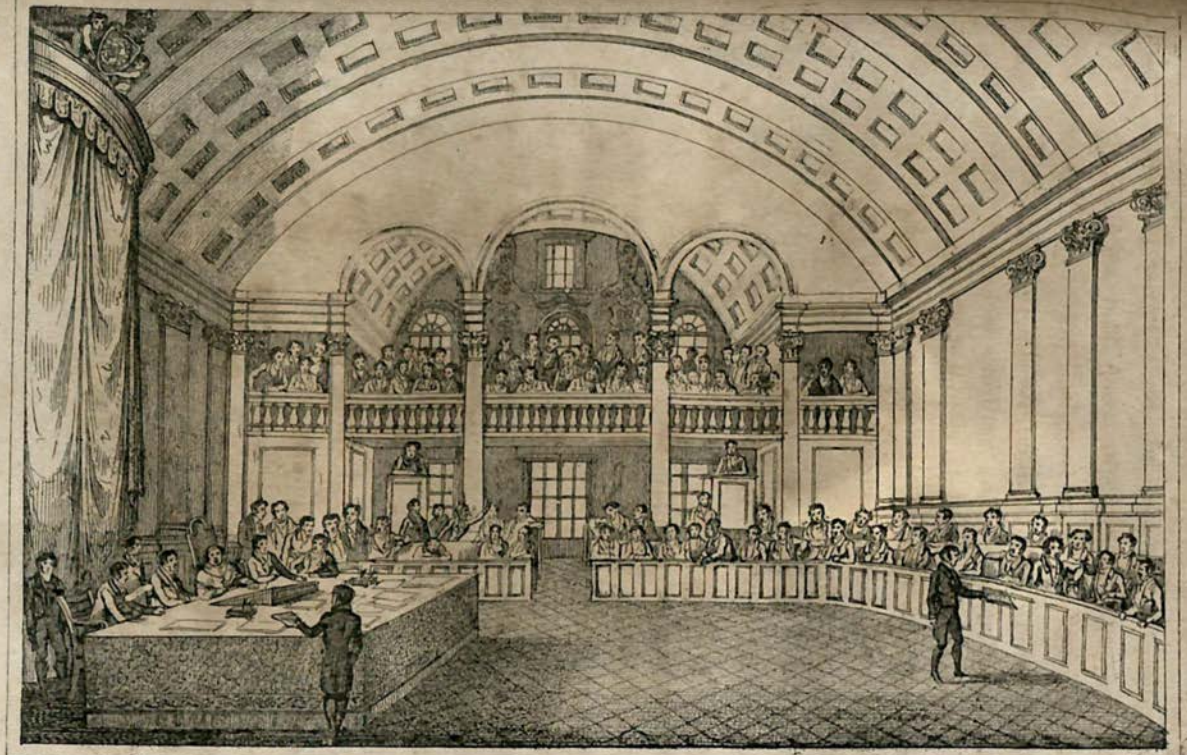
On the next day I attended the chamber of deputies, to hear the debates on the speech, and here a very different scene presented itself. The hour appointed for the commencement of business, is ten o'clock in the forenoon, and the president takes the chair, and the debate commences, when fifty, or half the number of the deputies are assembled. I called early on my friend Vasconcellos, who had just arrived in town. I found this celebrated orator, the leader of the popular voice of Brazil, the representative of its most opulent and influential province, accommodated in a manner very different from such a character in England. He lodged in a very dirty house, up a dark narrow staircase, with every thing about him as comfortless as it was mean. I found him in a back room at breakfast, with some other deputies, and their refreshments were as simple, and their equipage

as humble, as if a group of our common labourers were at a meal. They sat at a coarse naked kitchen table, without a cloth. They were partaking of tea and bread, which they broke between them, without knives or plates. Supposing I was an intruder on their menage, which they might not wish a stranger should witness, I was hastily retiring, but I was cordially received and welcomed; and these legislators, like Andrew Marvel with his cold mutton, did not seem at all conscious, that they were not as dignified in their humble and frugal meal, as if they were surrounded with luxuries served on plate. We proceeded together to the chamber.

The building in which the deputies assembled was originally the cadeia, or prison, and is situated just opposite the Rua da Cadeia, which is named from it. This circumstance has afforded a subject of sarcasm to the party hostile to the democratic chamber, who call the deputies by a name synonymous to our "gaol birds." It was diverted from its original use, on the arrival of the king, when it was attached to the palace, behind which it immediately stands, as one of the buildings appropriated to the accommodation of persons about the court. It was afterwards converted into

a post-office, and finally into a parliament-house. The lower part is still held by the post establishment, but the upper is fitted for a chamber, in which the deputies hold their sessions, with corresponding apartments for their secretaries and committees. The chamber was convoked for ten A.M., and such was the eagerness of the deputies, that the debate immediately commenced.

When I arrived, the street was crowded with people, who all seemed in a state of high excitement, discussing subjects, in various groups, in which the words "quarta vez," "fourth time," were often repeated, in tones of considerable displeasure. The stairs leading to the galleries were filled with people passing up and down, and the galleries were so crowded, that I found it impossible to make my way into any place where I could hear or see, and the interest of all about me was engaged to such an intense degree, that they would answer no question, but remained in the attitude of listeners, to catch even the sound of a word. At length, I thought of applying to some of the deputies, from whom I had just parted, and by their interference, I was admitted into one of the small boxes reserved for particular persons.



I. J. ad vivo del.

on Stone by N. Whittock

CHAMBER OF DEPUTIES.

Printed by G.W. Lander, 14, Paternoster Row

ROYAL ... OF THE ROMEAY BRANCH OUGH ASIATIC SOCIETY

The chamber is an arched saloon supported on pillars, between which are galleries at each side, rising towards the roof, and capable of holding two or three hundred persons. These galleries are always open to the public, except on specified occasions; and no ticket or interference of any kind is required for admission. They are as free as the street, and are always filled with people, sometimes of the humblest rank; yet the most perfect silence and decorum are observed, arising partly from the intense interest with which they listen to what is said. At the angles are four small private boxes, reserved for particular persons, especially for foreigners attached to the different legations; and immediately below them are four tribunes, with desks in each, at which a reporter sits to take down the debates, where he is at his ease, and hears and sees distinctly without any of those impediments to accuracy which our reporters complain of. The deputies sit on benches with backs, forming two concentric circles; and each occupies always the same seat. At the upper end of the chamber is the throne, surmounted with a canopy, with the arms of Brazil in front. Whenever the emperor may appoint the opening of the legislative body in this chamber, he occupies this throne; at all

other times it is concealed by a curtain pendant from the canopy. As this opening of the chamber never has taken place here, and probably never will, a friend who was with me suggested to one of the deputies, in jest, to convert it into the president's chair. He took it quite in earnest, and turning to me with a serious, and somewhat alarmed countenance, asked if the gentleman was not a citizen of the United States. The spirit of democracy is supposed to be so prevalent, that any thing that has the remotest allusion to it, excites an immediate consciousness. In front of the throne is a large table, at which sits the president with two secretaries on each side; one of whom, when he is not present, occupies his place; and before them usually stand two silver cups, for receiving the members' tickets when a ballot takes place. The ministers and members who support them sit on the right hand side of the president, and the opposition on the left; and thus they are distinguished like the côté droit, and côté gauche, of the French chambers.

The first thing that struck me in the appearance of this house of commons, was the number of ecclesiastics, known either by their vestments or their shaven crowns. The president was the Bishop of Bahia, a low corpulent man, dressed

in his pontifical robes. The lay members were distinguished by no particular costume, but were all neat in their appearance, in a greater degree, I think, than the members of our house. They sat, moreover, uncovered; a courtesy to the chamber not observed by us. They all rose to speak in their places, and the feeling and excitement of the moment had not time to evaporate in formally ascending a tribune, as in the French chambers. I was quite astonished at the ease, volubility, and animation with which they delivered themselves. Every thing they said appeared as energetic as it was unstudied; and if I was to form an opinion of the character of the people from their deputies, I would say they were a nation of orators. They all seem to express themselves with the same facility. When a man rose to speak, he laid his hand on the front rail of the seat, and waited for a moment, as if to bespeak attention. He began with a quiet gravity, and rose gradually with his subject into a strain of rapid eloquence, accompanied by the most passionate action. Their replies were as prompt and fluent as their speeches; and I never heard a man speak who seemed to me to have a set speech made for the occasion. The debates, notwithstanding the animation of the speakers, were conducted

with great regularity and decorum. They never disturbed each other by any unseasonable interruption, and were perfectly amenable to the president's decision and the rules of the chamber. It was certainly creditable to these infant legislators, who had been secluded from all intercourse with foreign nations by narrow laws, and from each other by the natural state of the vast regions over which they were scattered, that they should so soon arrive at maturity; and without precept to teach, or example to guide, should instinctively adopt a conduct, which one hardly sees in the most practised assemblies. It argues well for the freedom and prosperity of their magnificent country.

Among the most distinguished speakers, was my friend Vasconcellos, who is the great leader of the opposition, and is always listened to with deep attention. From the quiet and hesitating manner of his conversation, I expected little from his oratory; but I was agreeably mistaken. His person is heavy and ungraceful, and his manner, when he commences, is correspondent; but as he warms with the interest of his subject, he gradually becomes more and more impassioned, and his language and his delivery are then eloquent and convincing. He is, however, more distinguished for logical precision; and in acute-

ness of reasoning, he has no equal in the assembly.

Of a very different character is his friend Custodio Dias, member also for the province of Minas Geraes. He is a thin brown man, with sharp prominent features, of a nervous quickness of manner; and when at all excited, which is often the case, from a very slight cause, the muscles of his face are agitated by an extraordinary tremulous motion. He dresses in a frock of rusty black stuff, which, when buttoned, adds to his slender and meagre appearance; he wears his black hair cut short round his forehead, and is distinguished by a small tonsure on his crown, as large as a dollar, the mark of his ecclesiastical character. His manners are the most pure and unmixed specimens of native growth. He told me, he never was out of Brazil, and spoke no language but Portuguese, except the Latin of his clerical profession, in which we conversed. He is one of the most constant speakers in the chamber, and sometimes the most violent. He is shrewd and intelligent, of quick apprehension, rapid conception, and fluent delivery; but seems almost excited to a degree of derangement on any constitutional question; indeed, the very word constitution, uttered in the assembly, is like a spark

cast among combustible materials, which sets any member in a blaze. He sometimes alarms the religious prejudices of the people by some daring proposal, violating the sanctity of saints' and holy days. The question of finance was one of such consequence, that it would admit of no delay, and he moved that the assembly should not intermit their discussions even on Good Friday. The motion was negatived, and it so shocked some of the people of Rio with whom I conversed, that they have since pronounced him an atheist.

Another member distinguished in the assembly is Luiz Augusto May, also an ecclesiastic, and member for the Minas Geraes, which is remarkable for returning men distinguished by talent and singularity. May is a Portuguese by birth, and now an elderly man, with a thin aspect, and long white hair hanging over his face and shoulders. He has long been the editor of the paper, which he called, with great propriety, a "Malagueta," which I before mentioned.

Raymondo José da Cunha Matos is also a distinguished orator, whom I heard speak. He is deputy from some distant province, either Goyaz or Matto Grosso; if for the latter, which returns but one, he is member for the largest

portion of country that ever one person represented. The province is as large as France and Germany united, yet the Marquez d'Aracaty informed me, when he was governor of it a few years ago, it contained but 30,000 inhabitants. Cunha Matos is a military man, and a soldierly looking person, about forty, with a very determined careless air, and speaks with great freedom and energy, accompanied by much personal action. He is a violent oppositionist.

Besides these, Joaquim Gonsalves Ledo, deputy for the province of Rio de Janeiro, I thought particularly eloquent. There was a strain of courtesy and kindness in his manner that won over those even whom his arguments did not convince, and he struck me at once, as being a gentleman and a man of a good and hnmane disposition.

The last I shall mention is José Clemente Pereira, a deputy also from Rio de Janeiro, and minister of the interior. I never missed him from the chamber. He was a lawyer of eminence, and married a rich widow. In the time of the cortes, he was president of a masonic society, which presented a petition on the necessity of recognizing that body in Brazil. He is supposed to be firmly attached to the constitution. He was always in his place on the part of

the ministry, to defend the measures of administration when attacked, which he seemed to do with considerable readiness and dexterity. His manner is abrupt, his arguments close, and his language terse and concise.

In order that you may yourself in some manner appreciate the talents and characters of the men I have described, I send the substance of a debate, and the very words of some of the speakers, which I took down on the spot. I also send you a sketch of the interior of the chamber, taken by a German artist whom I brought with me to the gallery, and who has endeavoured to introduce, as far as could be done on such a scale, the persons of the deputies. It represents of course but one section of the chamber, that of the costa esquerda, côté gauche, or opposition side. The ecclesiastic in the president's chair, is the Bishop of Bahia. The speaker with vehement gesture and action is Custodio Dias; beside him Cunha Matos; and the corpulent figure leaning on the bar of the bench and attentively listening, is Vasconcellos. The persons in the tribunes are the reporters, and the men on the floor are attendants handing round the finance reports just published, for the informaion of the members.

The subject of the debate was the answer to

the address; the discussion of which, with the amendments proposed by Vasconcellos and others, were continued for eight or nine days. Of the two objects mentioned as reasons for the premature assembling of the legislative body,—one,—the arrival of the Portuguese emigrants had ceased to exist before the chamber met; it was, therefore, proposed that no notice of this should be taken in the reply, as it would be quite superfluous; the other, on the question of finance, had excited much heat and ill humour from the manner in which it had been recommended; and the peremptory and angry rebuke implied in the observation, that the emperor recommended it for the *fourth time*, had elicited a variety of observations, in which the offensive words were repeated and tortured in all manner of tones and forms. There was a sufficient reason, they said, for recommending it so often; and that was because ministers had refused all information, repeatedly asked for, on the subject; yet they insulted the chamber by supposing they had not the interests of the country at heart, in thus neglecting to take efficacious measures in the affairs of finance; and they demanded further sacrifices from the people, when they had not given any account of the money they had already received. The first speaker that

particularly attracted my notice, was Gonsalves Ledo, member for Rio; he was of opinion, that no notice of the Portuguese troops should be taken in the reply to the address, and he spoke, as I thought, very eloquently, as follows:—

"It is undoubtedly," said he, "the usage, and the necessary practice of the chamber, to advert to all the topics recommended in the speech from the throne; but, is this a topic? Certainly not, Mr. President. A topic is all that proposition which announces business, which it is right to discuss, either to provide remedies for the past, or precautions for the future; and which announces remedies or precautions already taken by the executive, and submitted to the legislative body for their information or approbation. But the mere mention of the Portuguese troops does not come under any of these cases. It scarcely enters into the speech from the throne as an historic event, and should not for a moment occupy the time of the assembly, as a matter they ought to discuss. It is absurd to suppose that the throne requires an opinion of the chamber, as to a circumstance which never arrived at existence, when it is anxious to direct all our care to an event, which has actually taken place, and threatens us with impending evils. It is true, Mr. President, that our hearts

were frozen with horror, at hearing that those strange troops were approaching; it is true, that there is no Brazilian, to whom his country is dear, who does not tremble, when he contemplates the increase of difficulties and embarrassments which these emigrants would heap upon the empire; it is true, that there is not one who does not curse, from the bottom of his heart, those two foul cancers which, on the banks of the Thames, are eating into the substance of Brazil, and who are stigmatized as the authors of this resolution of the Portuguese; and, in the same degree, it is natural that our fury should blaze out when the evil has passed us. But that conduct which is suitable to an individual citizen, is unsuitable to the national representative. We are called upon to remedy evils that exist—what have we to do with those which do not? Did their coming depend upon government? No. Did their return? No. There is not time left us, then, for censure or approbation. Is it then to obtain the opinion of the nation? That has been already expressed in a thousand different ways. Therefore, Mr. President, the committee will act with perfect prudence in guarding silence on this subject—an energetic silence, which will speak more loudly than any reply, and which, moreover, will secure us from

the imputation, as legislators, of levity or inhumanity—of levity, in deciding hostilely, and without a serious examination of all its bearings and motives, and the influence it might have on our foreign and domestic relations—of inhumanity, since assuredly there will not be wanting those among our constituents, who will say, that such was our anxiety to evince to the world, that we would deny an asylum to brave men, who supported our own principles, and adopted our own system, and were for that reason persecuted by a tyrant, that we would not let pass the most indirect occasion to display it. No, Mr. President. Let us bless that Providence, who rules the destinies of nations, from the bottom of our hearts, that we are delivered from those embarrassing difficulties; but let us not, with respect to this, display to other nations that we are inconsiderate or inhuman."

Vasconcellos rose in reply.—"A speech from the throne," said he, "is the speech of the minister, and in this light it has been considered in Brazil, during three different discussions, in the chamber of deputies. It is in this view that I offer the amendments lying on the table; and it is in this view that every member of the assembly here analyzed its contents.

"When a communication of this kind is made,

how does the legislative body of England act? It follows a system different from that of all others. The answer to the speech is nothing more than a conception (*huma idéa*) of the same expressions that fall from the throne, insomuch so that the reply is made on the same day that the chambers are opened.

"But the French take another path (*outra vereda*). The French assembly suppose that they ought to communicate to the sovereign the sentiments of the people; and this is the line of conduct we ought to follow. The monarch communicates the opinions of the government, and the general assembly, in reply, returns the opinions of the nation. What better opportunity can the legislative body have to convey truth to the throne, than that in which the throne commences by submitting to it the conduct of the administration? Consequently it is unquestionable that we ought to avail ourselves of that occasion.

"The expressions used to the throne ought to be very respectful;—I admit it; but those which we use on important occasions ought to be such as are adapted to the good of the Brazilian people. Consequently, since we have heard the speech at the opening of the chambers, we ought to declare, in reply, the truth,

such as it is. Let no one tell me, gentlemen, that truth is harsh and apt to cause scandal; it never can scandalize any but the enemies of public prosperity. Brazil possesses a monarch who desires to hear the truth; [*great applause*] who may be many times deceived; but the moment he hears the truth he embraces it: [*great applause.*] My amendment proposes to notice that part of the speech from the throne, which states that one cause for the early convocation of the legislative body had ceased to exist; but an illustrious deputy supposes we ought not now to touch on this part of the speech. But, Sirs, the throne has deemed it so important, as notwithstanding the change of circumstances, to communicate it to the chamber; and shall the chamber show so great a want of interest in the coming of Portuguese troops, as not to notice an event which would compromise the tranquillity, independence, and liberty of Brazil? Why such culpable indifference? I can see no sufficient reason for it.

"My amendment embraces two objects; to express to his Majesty the great pleasure his communication on this subject gives to the chamber of deputies, and to declare what are the sentiments of the nation upon it—that they will never give permission for the entrance of

Portuguese troops into Brazil. It appears to me that this amendment in both its parts contains no expressions either unworthy of this chamber or offensive to the throne. It is certain that the throne prefers the prosperity of the country to every other consideration, and cannot therefore wish for the arrival of those troops. How then is it possible for a moment to suppose that such a declaration is in the slightest degree offensive? It cannot be."

He was followed by Custodio Dias, who rose with his usual impatience, and burst out with his usual impetuosity:—"I will use," said he, "no argument to convince the chamber of a fact, of which they already are, or ought to be, persuaded, that every speech from the throne is a composition of the minister, and should always be answered as such. But I will even assume that it is not; and yet, I will say, that it ought to be the established principle of the deputies of the people to speak the truth, and tell it to the throne, however rough and harsh it may be considered. But perhaps it would more accord with the dignity of the organ, through which a great and cultivated people express their sentiments, to use decorous circumlocutions (*rodeios*), and cautious and distant allusions, rather than the strong and

manly language of veracity, in detailing matters of fact and notoriety! But I say, that the deputies of the nation are about to speak to a chief who is himself but a deputy of the nation, for all the powers established in Brazil are recognized but as delegates emanating from the people, and acting for their benefit alone; and when any of them are addressed, it is necessary to use plain and distinct language. If that language be not understood, or not attended to, the right of enforcing it belongs to those who speak it. When they dictate, they must be obeyed; if not, resistance is not less their right than it is their duty; and if the nation must have recourse to this last expedient, we will see who will be victorious.* The alternative has now arrived, and if the ministers who have brought the nation to its present state of embarrassment and distress, do not resign, the nation must rise and dismiss them." He then stated that he had a specific catalogue of offences to charge them with.

This brought up Clemente Pereira, the minister of the interior, to defend the measures

* The expression "Então a nação recorrera ao ultimo meio e veremos quem vince," was afterwards quoted by all the newspapers, and repeated by all the people, with various feelings of reprobation and applause; but from what I could learn, the latter greatly predominated.

of himself and his colleagues. Among other things, they had been accused of wishing to involve Brazil in a war with Portugal, and the conduct of their agents in England had afforded foundation for the charge.

"A proposition," said he, "of the most perilous nature has been just laid down by the Senhor Padre José Custodio, averring, in the most positive manner, that if by chance the ministers who compose the actual administration, did not resign, in consequence of charges made against them, it would be necessary to have recourse to the last expedient which the nation should decide on.

"It is terrible to hear expressions so subversive of all government, so unworthy of being pronounced in this chamber. God forbid we should ever arrive at this horrible state of things, so disastrous if his proposition be verified! But I demand from the illustrious deputy, the facts and documents on which he founds his accusation. I pledge myself he can produce none. But ministers, on the contrary, will prove by facts and documents, at the proper time, and when legally required, that so far from wishing to involve the country in the affairs of Portugal, they have reproved, in the most decided manner, all acts in that

respect, committed by the Brazilian diplomatists in Europe, and one of them has even been dismissed for his conduct. Will the illustrious deputy impute to ministers, among other faults, that Europe is situated at such a distance from Brazil, that the expression of their disapprobation could not arrive in London, before it was possible to reach it?

"With respect to the recommendation on the subject of finance, which members have dwelt on with such reiteration, the speech from the throne affirmed merely, that salutary and efficacious methods should be adopted. Will the illustrious deputy say that the methods taken have been efficacious? The very necessity of the recommendation is a proof that they have not. It is not by vague and indefinite charges that any thing is proved. I rejoice that the reverend deputy, Custodio Dias, has something specific to bring forward, we shall then put it to the test, and ascertain who is the delinquent."

When the president put the question, he said, "Let all who are of this opinion rise." The *ayes* therefore stood up, and the *noes* remained sitting. The amendments of Vasconcellos were carried by a considerable majority. At one, P. M. the house adjourned.

All the time we remained in Rio, the same intense interest was excited by the details of the chamber of deputies, the galleries of which were crowded every day, while the gallery of the senate, to which the public are equally invited, was always empty. With the exception of the bolleros, or drivers of cabriolets, and other attendants on the members, I seldom met a person there.

When I next called to see Vasconcellos, he was very unwell, with a violent affection of his chest, from over exertion in the chamber. He was lying extended on his bed, scarcely able to move or breathe, and the physician informed me, it was probable he would not long survive; and this Franklin, as he is called, of South America, would leave a vacancy in the chamber, which would not be speedily filled up in Brazil. He is a man who steers an even course between the extremes of despotism and democracy. He is a sincere and ardent friend of the constitutional government, which he conceives best calculated to confer happiness and prosperity on such a country as Brazil, and equally an enemy to the wild and visionary schemes of pure republicanism, which he knows would involve it in interminable anarchy and confusion. Such a man, whose character

gives weight, and whose eloquence brings conviction of the justness of his political opinions, would be a serious public loss in the present state of the country.

Notwithstanding the decided hostility expressed by the chambers, to the introduction of any Portuguese emigrants, in which they only echoed the voice of the country, a body of them, among whom were some Germans, had a short time before arrived. A Danish vessel brought over 184, who left Plymouth in March, and landed them at Rio in a state of great distress. This was at first talked of very warmly, as a dangerous and daring measure, infringing on the constitution; and it was supposed they would be obliged to return. But after remaining some days in great misery, without any support from government, the good nature of the Brazilians overcame their prejudices. A subscription was entered into for their relief, to which the emperor himself set down his name as an individual; and when a sufficient sum was collected, they were placed under the care of the superintendent of colonies, and located in the interior; an important benefit to a country, where every white man introduced is a valuable acquisition.

April the 4th was the birth-day of the young Queen of Portugal, when she attained her tenth

year, and there was a grand levee at the palace, to which we went for the last time. Besides the usual assemblage which I had met before, there were then present the French and English admirals and their officers. I met also on this occasion the Rev. Mr. Stewart, who was on his way from North America to the Sandwich Islands as a missionary, and who has published a very interesting account of his former residence there. I was well pleased afterwards to cultivate his acquaintance at the house of Mr. Tudor, the American minister, and found him a very amiable man. The accident of our both meeting at this place was of rare occurrence, as two clergymen of the reformed church are not often seen at the same time, at a levee in Brazil. The emperor on this occasion stood on the steps of the throne with his three children, his son and two daughters, and it was certainly an interesting spectacle to see the father and his little family about him; it would, however, have been more so, had they been dressed with the simplicity of the boy on a former occasion, but now they were buried in inflated gauses, and glittering in tinsel, and resembled the gaudy young angels in the procession of Passion-week.

When I first went forth to view the town, my mind was filled with the accounts I had

heard, of the intolerable insolence and tyranny exercised over the people, when any of the royal family went abroad, and the more than oriental homage exacted from persons of all ranks, whenever they accidentally met them. The picadores, the cadets of the court, and whole tribes of attendants, which moved as satellites round the orb of the royal carriage, were called, by the Brazilians, by the very appropriate name of " largura," or persons who kept the whole way to themselves, and trampled, without mercy or consideration, on whoever stood in their path and could not move out of it, which it was very difficult to do, in narrow streets, through which they drove at a furious speed. To this was frequently added personal insult, and often violent assaults on individuals, who, from inadvertence or ignorance, suffered a royal carriage to pass without falling on their knees; and as I have heard persons describe it, who were themselves witnesses and sufferers, it must have been the most odious and insufferable that ever was exercised in modern times, and equalled only by the absurd and oppressive regulations of Paul at St. Petersburgh, in the time of his greatest insanity.

The first coming of the royal family, was hailed by the people with such enthusiasm, that

they were ready themselves to pay a homage, which they thought due to a superior order of beings in the creation, and they paid it freely, even without its being exacted; but it was also exacted from foreigners, whose modes of thinking, and habits of life, were repugnant to such assumption, and some very disagreeable collisions with those satellites convinced the court that they would not submit to the degradation. This example, and the growing spirit of disaffection among the people, as the first impressions of awe and reverence wore away, at length abated it to such a degree, that, on our arrival, not a trace of it remained.

Almost the first person I encountered when I went abroad, was the emperor, and with the impression of what I had heard on my mind, I hastily escaped into a door-way, not feeling disposed either to kneel down in the mud, or be flogged. He passed, however, in a phaeton, in a very plain way; few noticed his approach, and the only mark of respect, was the common courtesy of taking off the hat, which every Brazilian pays to his neighbour, even of inferior rank to himself. I frequently met him afterwards, and was sometimes so engaged with other objects, that I neglected even this ceremony, but I never was reminded of it by any

of his attendants. Indeed, not a trace of that haughtiness and servility, which I had heard so much of, seemed to remain. Whenever the emperor goes with an escort along an open and little frequented plain, he generally proceeds at a sweeping pace; but when he enters a street or thronged road, he and his attendants move gently and with caution, as if the life and limbs of his subjects were held by him in some estimation.

The church of N. S. da Gloria, close by our house, was that to which he was particularly attached, from a sincere and deep feeling, I was told, for the memory of his wife. Every Saturday, at nine in the morning, as regular as the movement of a clock, he passed our door, driving four mules in a phaeton, and attended by a troop of horse with a trumpeter. I frequently followed in my morning walk over the hill. The emperor always stopped his phaeton at the bottom, and walked up, leaning on his chamberlain, and dressed generally in plain clothes. A few respectable people of the neighbourhood formed the congregation on this occasion, and when he walked in they followed him; he knelt on a carpet laid on the steps of the altar, and they knelt behind him. I have observed him during the continuance of the service, and he seemed

serious and sincere, frequently crossing himself with much devotion. When it was over they all rose, and he walked out among the crowd, as a simple individual of the congregation. He was generally accosted in the portico by some person, with whom he entered into familiar conversation; and on one occasion a droll forward fellow, of the lower ranks, told him some story with the ease and familiarity he would to a common acquaintance, at which the emperor laughed heartily, and every one about him joined, as if they were not in the smallest degree restrained by his presence. On his way down he generally had a group about him joking in the same way, and his whole progress was totally divested of any seeming dislike to the *profanum vulgus*, or a wish to repel them, but was on the extreme of familiarity. When he again entered his carriage he drove off with velocity, followed by his guards at a gallop, and was soon lost in clouds of dust and sand.

I had, however, an opportunity of a more intimate knowledge of him by a personal interview. It had occurred to me on leaving England, that some books would be an acceptable presentation in a young country, where literature was beginning to dawn, a thirst for information evinced, and the pursuit of know-

ledge every way encouraged by the emperor and his ministers. To this end I got some works in which I myself had some concern, and which I knew had not made their way to Brazil, splendidly bound in England, and brought them with me; and I communicated to the Marquez d'Aracaty, the minister of foreign affairs, with whom I was personally acquainted, my wish to present them to his Imperial Majesty, knowing his wish for information of every kind, and presuming to hope that he would not be indisposed to receive them, as a tribute of respect from a stranger. The marquez informed me in reply, that his master was pleased to accept with great satisfaction the works I offered, and to afford me an opportunity of paying my personal respects at the palace of S. Christovão, on the following Monday at twelve o'clock.

The palace of S. Christovão stands at the opposite extremity of Rio, about three miles from the city. It was originally a private house, and exhibits a proof, among others, of the estimation in which Dom John was held on his first arrival, when the good citizens were all pressing forward, eager to show him marks of their personal esteem and good-will. Among these, Eliaz Antonio Lopez, a rich merchant of Rio, particularly distinguished himself. He had

built a country-seat near the village of S. Christovão, to which he retired with his family from the fatigues of business. The Prince Regent at this time had no residence, except the hot and not very healthy palace in the middle of Rio; and when the citizen saw him harassed and exhausted with the exertions of a busy day, without the means of retirement and pure air, he immediately determined to give up his own residence for his accommodation. He therefore sent for workmen, had the front of the house emblazoned with the royal arms, the rooms splendidly furnished, and when every thing was ready, he invited the king to see it. Dom John was astonished to find a citizen's chacara fitted up with the splendour of a royal residence, but more so when he was informed it was done for his use and accommodation. The offer of it was joyfully accepted, and from that time it has been the constant and favourite residence of his family, and is called the Quinta Real of Boa Vista.

It stands on a considerable eminence near the river Maracanan; behind it rises a magnificent chain of hills, or rather mountains, forming a dense mass of light and shade, from which emerges an inclined peak, called from its shape, Bico do Papagaio, or the Parrot's Bill, which is

nearly 1800 feet high. Advancing from this dark and picturesque chain, are several smaller hills and knolls covered with wood, smiling in the light with varied hues of rich and vivid verdure; before it lies the bay, expanded with its islands; and sweeping just under the eminence on which the house stands, are the beautiful bays of Alferes and the Gamboa. Indeed, nothing, even in Brazil, exceeds the beauty of the prospect from this situation.

As I approached the house, I perceived two edifices, intended also for palaces, but not finished; one was begun by the citizens for Dom John, near his favourite spot, but discontinued when he left the country; the other, with little regard to decorum or the restraint of public opinion, was erected, I was informed by the driver of my carriage, for the Marqueza de Santos, and he shook his head with a very serious countenance. The original house of the worthy citizen is still the royal residence, but the emperor has greatly enlarged it, making to it every year some addition. It is a long edifice, having a façade of two large pavilions, united by an open veranda. There is little taste displayed in the grounds about the house; the eminence is highly susceptible of picturesque improvements, but is quite naked; the spirit of the

people being here as conspicuous as elsewhere, improving the country by cutting down trees, but never planting them. The approach is by an open screen of Portland-stone, something like the entrance to Hyde Park.

When Dom John first obtained possession of this place, he was about to erect a proper approach to it, which it altogether wanted; and Lord Strangford made for him a sketch of the elegant screen at the entrance of Sion House, which was greatly admired by the Prince Regent. This circumstance was communicated by his lordship to the late Duke of Northumberland, who munificently caused an exact model of it to be made of Portland stone in England, surmounted with the arms of Portugal; and had it transported to Brazil at his own expense. It was, however, spoiled in the erection, from the very awkward position in which it stands; and you see a very elegant architectural ornament altogether out of its place. To increase its effect, it has been surmounted with pine-apples; not in the way in which we represent them, as architectural members, but standing on long branching stalks, as unnatural as they are mean. In the front of the building is a court-yard, with a circular fountain in the centre, surrounded by low whitewashed walls, like a

common farm-yard. The resemblance was more complete, by several mean looking segés, or cabriolets, standing round it; the dirty drivers of which were in keeping with their carriages. There was a levee of ministers at the palace, and these were the machines in which they arrived.—So simple was the equipage of the ministers of a great empire.

I was a few minutes before my time, and I employed them in walking up and down the veranda, with one of the pages. In a room which opened into it, was the young princess Januaria, with her music master, Portugallo, a celebrated composer, who resides at Rio, and of whom the emperor is very fond. He has produced several fine operas, performed at the Rio theatre; and it is said, assisted the emperor in all the compositions, for which he has gained exclusive credit. The progress of his present pupil on the piano-forte, did not seem to be very promising; and her attempts appeared to me to evince but little musical talent. At each end of the veranda was a large door-way, closed by an embroidered screen of cloth, exactly like the door curtains of the east; presently one of them was lifted up, and the Marquez d'Aracaty made his appearance at the opening, and beckoned me in.

I found the emperor standing in the middle of a room inside. When I had seen him before on the steps of the throne, with his little boy beside him, he looked to me a tall and portly man; but when I now approached, and we stood close together, I perceived his person was below the middle size, and remarkably thick and sturdy. His face was full, and appeared deeply pitted or blotched. His hair was black and thick about his forehead, with large whiskers, and his countenance rather coarse and forbidding. His manner, however, though dry, was affable and courteous. When I approached him, he said to me in French, "I am much obliged to you for the books you sent me by the Marquez d'Aracaty." "Your Majesty does me too much honour. I trust you found in them something to approve of?" "Oh! as to that, I have not had time yet to read them; besides, I do not understand English well." "I have been informed your Majesty speaks it fluently?" "No! I was learning it from father Tilbury, but he is ill, poor man. How did you find the interior of the country through which you travelled?" "Oh! the country is very superb, it only wants inhabitants." "What do you think of our botanic garden; we hope to make something of it?" "It will be highly useful, when the indigenous

plants are scientifically arranged." After a few more similar observations, I made my bow, and was conducted out by the marquez; and I have transcribed for you, verbatim, what passed; as, perhaps, you would wish to know in what manner the emperor converses.

As there were some interesting things in the palace, I wished to see the interior; and before we separated, asked the marquez if I might go over it; but he gave me to understand it was not in order; and in fact it is not showed to strangers, from a feeling that it is not fit to be seen. Besides the cabinet of the late empress, there are also specimens of the handy workmanship of the emperor; he, like his great namesake of Russia, is a good mechanic; and these memorials will hereafter be preserved and exhibited in a national museum to posterity, as the remains of this second Peter, and founder of a great empire in the new, as the other was in the old world. While yet a child, an ivory ship was presented to him by Colonel Cunningham, a gift from Sir Sidney Smith. It had been broken in the carriage, and required some ingenuity to put it again together. He called for his box of tools, and soon repaired it in all its parts, with the skill of a shipwright, and the dexterity of a carpenter. His apartment is a

workshop, in which is a lathe and a bench, and here he has constructed sundry articles. Over the lathe is a tablet on the ceiling, I believe of his own device and execution. It represents a telescope, an ear trumpet, and a padlock, implying by these emblems that all who enter the palace, should see, hear, and say nothing. Had I been shown this device, I should perhaps have held myself bound, not to transgress it, even by the foregoing communication.

The emperor's habits are very active and very temperate. He rises every morning before day, and, not sleeping himself, is not disposed to let others sleep. He usually begins, therefore, with discharging his fowling-piece about the palace, till all the family are up. He breakfasts at seven o'clock, and continues engaged in business, or amusement, till twelve, when he again goes to bed and remains till half-past one; he then rises and dresses for dinner. The Brazilians, as far as I have observed, are neat and cleanly in their persons; and the emperor is eminently so. He is never seen in soiled linen or dirty clothes. He dines with his family at two, makes a temperate meal, and seldom exceeds a glass of wine, and then amuses himself with his children, of whose society he is very fond. He is a strict and severe, but an affectionate father, and they at

once love and fear him. I heard Baron Maréchal, the Austrian minister, say, he one day paid him a visit: he met no person at the door to introduce him; so availing himself of his intimacy, he entered without being announced. He found the emperor in an inner room, playing with his children with his coat off, entering with great interest into all their amusements, and like another Henry IV. was not ashamed to be found by a foreign ambassador so employed. At nine he retires to bed.

His education was early neglected, and he has never redeemed the lost time. He still, however, retains some classical recollections, and occasionally takes up a Latin book, particularly the breviary, which he reads generally in that language. He wished to acquire a knowledge of English, and to that end he commenced, along with his children, a course of reading with the Rev. Mr. Tilbury, an Englishman, who has taken orders in the Catholic church, and to whose courtesy and information on several subjects, I am very much indebted. After having made some progress, he laid it aside and began to learn French, in which he sometimes converses. He has an English groom, from whom also he unfortunately learned some English. This fellow, I am informed, is greatly addicted to swearing

and indecent language, and the emperor, and even the late empress, adopted some of his phraseology, without being aware of its import.

In his domestic expenses he is exceedingly frugal. The careless profusion of his father, and the total derangement of the finances, had involved the country in such difficulties, that he found it necessary to set an example of frugality in his own person, by limiting himself to a certain expenditure. In his speech to the constituent assembly, he announced this determination. "The king's disbursement," said he, "amounted to four millions; mine does not exceed one. I am resolved to live as a private gentleman, receiving only 110,000 milreis for my private expenses, except the allowance to which my wife is entitled by her marriage contract." This, at the rate of exchange before we left Rio, would not have amounted to more than 10,000*l.* per annum. His present allowance, as fixed by the chambers, is 200,000 milreis for himself, and 12,000 for his children.* To make this answer, he engages in various profitable pursuits, and adopts, in every thing, the most rigid system of economy. He lets out his fazenda at Santa Cruz, for grazing cattle

* See Appendix, No. VI.

passing to Rio from the Minas Geraes, and receives so much a-head from the drovers. His slaves cut capim, and sell it, on his account, in the streets, where they were pointed out to me, distinguished by plates on their caps. He derives, also, a revenue, I am told, from several caxas shops, of which he is the proprietor, and thinks, like Vespatian, that the money is not at all affected by the medium through which it passes. In his domestic expenses, he is rigid even to parsimony. He allows a very small sum to his cook, of the expenditure of which he exacts a minute account, and is very angry if this trifling sum is exceeded on any occasion; and it is said, that this was one cause of his disagreement with the late empress, whose free and careless bounty he never could restrain.

His natural abilities, however, seem to be very considerable. Left, at a very early and inexperienced age, entirely to himself, in a region where every state around him was revolutionized into republics, and the same spirit rapidly advancing through his own, he, with great sagacity, saw the line of conduct left him to adopt, and, with equal dexterity, pursued it. He could not hope to resist the public sentiment, but by appearing to lead, he has hitherto contrived effectually to guide it; and by these

means he has established a free constitution in Brazil, without any violent transition, and preserved it from the anarchy and confusion, that still convulse every other state in South America. It is said, however, that he has conjured up a spirit of democracy, which it is his anxious wish entirely to lay, and that he is essentially despotic in his principles; that his apparent design to establish constitutional freedom, was merely a bait to catch popularity; and having, as he supposes, guided the enthusiasm of the people till it has harmlessly exploded, and established himself firmly on the throne, he is now determined to reign by himself, and dispense altogether with troublesome popular assemblies, which he has already twice forcibly suppressed.

But those who know Brazil well, think such a thing most absurd to attempt, and impossible to achieve. The people are not Portuguese, and there is no party in the country who are disposed to imitate their political conduct. The Brazilians are essentially Americans, and have deeply imbibed the opinions of all the American states; too intelligent not to be well acquainted with their rights, and too powerful to surrender them; and I have heard the best informed persons say, that if once they were convinced that there

was no alternative between despotism and democracy, they would not, for a moment, hesitate to choose the latter. The emperor, whatever his inherent propensities may be, is too prudent and sagacious not to see this. The country, with all its impediments, has proceeded, under the present system, in a career of unexampled prosperity, and neither the emperor nor the people will be so unwise as to wish to change it.

When revolutionary principles began first to show themselves in South America, they were every where spread through the medium of secret societies, who either were, or professed to be, Freemasons. In the year 1818, an alvará was issued in Brazil, by which every person convicted of the act of belonging to any secret society, should be punished as if found guilty of high treason; the house in which the society met, be confiscated; and every person in whose possession were found medals, emblems, catechisms, or any symbols connected with them, be exiled to a fortress, and confined from four to ten years. In October, 1823, the constituent assembly repealed this law, all processes pending under it were suspended and abolished, as if they had never existed, and from that date secret societies were permitted, provided their object was communi-

cated to government, and found to contain nothing hostile to morals, religion, or the constitutional system; all others were deemed seditious conventicles, and those convicted of taking the oath, or acting under it, made liable to the penalty of loss of life, or banishment to a fortress. Immediately on passing this law, the emperor himself became grand master of all the masonic lodges in the country, which were then revived with great ceremony. On one occasion a lodge, of which the present minister of the interior was president, presented to him a petition on the subject of the cortes, which was printed at the time, and widely circulated: it concluded with the following laconic and familiar question to him as a brother mason, "Pedro veja se queres, ou não queres?—Will you, Peter, or will you not?" In a short time after, the lodges were again closed by his order; and to reconcile the masons to this proceeding, he substituted in their place the societies called apostolados, and invited the people to become members. The end proposed by these latter was also defeated, by admitting the person who had formed the suppressed assemblies; and after languishing for twelve months, they also ceased to meet, though they are still permitted to exist.

In the various changes and convulsions which the country has undergone, it had been the custom to discuss all political questions in the masonic and apostolado lodges, previous to their discussion in the public assemblies, and their decisions were generally adopted; they were, therefore, the jacobin clubs of Brazil, and attended with similar influence.

The emperor's dislike to secret societies is now so great, that he will not sanction the formation of any society, however legitimate and laudable its avowed object. They have begun to establish public libraries in several provincial towns, and they propose to annex to them literary or scientific institutions, as the most likely means of rendering more extensively useful, the knowledge contained in the books they collect. The very respectable ouvidor of St. João d'el Rey, as I have before stated, drew up a plan for a sociedade philopolytechnica in that town, to be connected with the library, and that no legal form might be omitted, he sent the prospectus to the emperor for his approbation, not doubting that it would immediately be sent back. The permission was never given, and when I left the country, the formation of that, and similar literary institutions, was suspended. From this, and other acts of the same kind, I have heard people

affirm that the emperor's present hostility to societies, which he once affected to patronize, and of which he was himself even a leading member, does not arise so much from his apprehension of their spreading republicanism, as of their diffusing knowledge, which he equally dreads, in the country.

But the circumstance, perhaps, which has caused his popularity to decline more than any other, is his open contempt for public opinion on certain moral duties. There are no people whom I have met with, who form a more just appreciation of character in this respect, than the Brazilians; and as the blameless and irreproachable conduct of the late empress was the theme of their highest praise, so the cause of her domestic unhappiness was an object of their deepest sympathy and reprobation. Over such a people, the influence of character is not to be despised with impunity; and he who governs them should be cautious to establish it. Under this impression, the emperor was very anxious to enter into another matrimonial engagement, with an European princess, and redeem that estimation in the minds of his subjects which he had neglected. It was reported in Brazil that he had not succeeded in this object, and had therefore intended to elevate another person to

the throne; but the deep mortification and dismay with which this suspicion was communicated to me by several, was a proof how seriously it was considered by the people, and how much moral influence would have been sacrificed by such a disregard to public opinion. Happily, however, such fears were groundless; the negotiation has succeeded; and a princess of the house of Bávaria, as good and amiable, it is said, as her predecessor, is about to add dignity and respect to the throne of Brazil, and to afford another bright example of moral conduct to the people.

As the time of our departure was now arrived, the North Star, Captain Arabin, was appointed to take us home; and, on the 4th of May, 1829, we took leave of our good friends, and embarked at night at Bota Fogo bay. Before light in the morning the anchor was weighed, and we stood out of the harbour with a heavy sea and wet weather.

The North Star had been three years on the coast of Africa, and she was stowed with all manner of African produce; between decks was a perfect menagery, with different kinds of monkeys, parrots, and paroquets, which every one was bringing home to his friends; and I was awoke in the morning by such a con-

cert of chattering and screaming, as made me think myself in Exeter 'Change, on a visit to Pidcock. But besides these larger animals, the ship swarmed with others that were not so agreeable. Myriads of ants, of a smaller size, but of a tougher consistence, and much harder to be killed than those at Rio, abounded in every direction, and devoured every animal and vegetable substance they could come at; they appeared to have destroyed all the fleas and bugs, but they then occupied their places, taking possession of our beds, and giving us no rest at night. Next came the cock-roaches, of a size almost incredible. When I first saw them flying across my cabin, I thought they were some small African birds; for they moved with a force, and evinced a strength and activity, altogether superior to what I could imagine of any of the insect tribe. They formed a nidus in every cavity; and whenever a fold of cloth or linen was opened, it was covered with their eggs or progeny in different stages. Another, and much more serious annoyance, were centipedes. These venomous creatures, sometimes four or five inches long, took refuge behind every projection that afforded them a retreat; and whenever a box, or even a book, was removed in my cabin, one or more of these

monsters was seen gliding along, with his multitude of feet, and threatening every one that approached him with his venomous fangs.

To encounter these plagues, Captain Arabin told me of a very singular device he had adopted. There is on the coast of Africa a very large and ravenous spider, resembling a tarantula, which feeds on all other insects, particularly the cock-roach; and ships sometimes encourage them on board to prey upon the other insects, as cats are taken to destroy rats and mice. With this view, he said, he had actually taken six on board, and found them of considerable service. I had no mode of judging how far the other insects had comparatively lessened, but certainly these spider-cats had enormously increased. In every angle of the timbers, in my cabin, a huge one had taken up his abode, his body nearly as large as a walnut, and his legs radiating from it in a circumference of seven or eight inches. They were not furnished with papulæ, and formed no webs. I adopted what I thought a more effectual method of abating the nuisance. I procured a bottle of rum, which I directed my servant to hang up in the cabin, and immerse in it every crawling thing he could catch; in a very short time

he filled it with all manner of mishapen and hideous objects.

Another effect of an African climate was that produced on the biscuit. It was taken on board at Sierra Leone, and in the passage to Rio, the larvæ in the flour had generated living insects, which burrowed in the bread, and filled it with curculios and different animalculæ; it was literally "instinct with life;" so that, when a piece of it was laid on the table, it began to move by its own internal living machinery. It was necessary to consume this on board, before fresh could be served out; but the providence of the captain had laid in a stock of flour at Rio, and we had fresh bread baked every day.

As there was no chaplain on board, I cheerfully undertook that duty, and the more so, as I imagined my services would be the more necessary, from the number of sick persons naturally expected in a ship, returning directly from a long sojourn on a pestiferous coast. I was, however, agreeably surprised to find it otherwise. The crew were remarkably healthy, with the exception of one or two, who were fast recovering, and every precaution was taken to keep them so. The most rigid cleanliness was adopted, the lower deck was kept

constantly dry and sweet, with a fine absorbent sandy powder. Every morning the main and upper decks were washed, and once a week scoured with sand-stones.

When we were about a fortnight at sea, we found ourselves approaching the spot where pirates abound, many of whom had recently committed most atrocious depredations. Their known practice is as follows. They set out generally from the Havannah, to hover about the coast of Africa; and if they conveniently can barter for and embark a cargo of slaves, they proceed directly for the island of Cuba. If they are not successful in this speculation, or if an opportunity for piracy present itself, in any part of their voyage, they seize the first ship they meet with, preferring one already laden with slaves. Having taken possession of the vessel, they murder, or, sometimes, in rare cases, put on shore, in some desert place, the white men found on board, and then proceed with the vessel and cargo to Cuba, where they land the slaves surreptitiously on the back of the island, and then enter the Havannah openly in ballast. This occurred in the case of a prize-crew of English put on board a captured slaver, who were murdered by these pirates in a ship called the Pelican.

The island of Cuba seems now the *refugium peccatorum* for every ruffian, and the spirit and practice of the buccaneers revived there at the present day. Like Algiers, and the piratical states of Barbary, it has become the opprobrium of the commercial and civilized world, and requires the same exertion of a strong hand to put it down. It seems also to be the great inlet for slaves, and the incentive to continue the traffic, and this without any of those pretexts which the Brazilians yet can plead. In the treaty made with Spain, by the British government, on the 22d of September, 1817, the very first article is, "That the slave trade shall be abolished through the entire dominions of Spain, on the 30th of May, 1820, and that after that period it shall not be lawful for any subjects of the crown of Spain to purchase slaves, or to carry on the slave trade on the coast of Africa, on any pretext whatever." To reconcile the speculators to the change, the sum of 400,000*l.* was actually paid by Great Britain, on the 20th of February, 1818, to the Spaniards, as a full compensation for the losses consequent on the abolition. Notwithstanding this, 20,000 slaves, it is calculated, are annually brought to Cuba, from the Gallinas and the river Bonny, on the coast of Africa, by these pirates and slavers.

Captain Arabin had met, while on the coast, one of these atrocious vessels. She was a ship of war from the Havannah, commanded by a Spaniard of the name of Jozé Antonio de la Bega. She was called the Veloz Passageiro, mounted twenty-four long guns, and was manned by 161 desperate fellows, of all nations. She was about 400 Spanish, equal to 680 English tons, capable of carrying 1200 slaves, and had a tender in company for stowing 400 more. Captain Arabin could find no pretext to interfere with the captain on the coast of Africa, as he had no positive evidence that he was come on a slaving expedition; but he had received certain information, that he would sail for the Havannah on the 1st of May, with his own ship and his consort full of slaves, and so cross our course near the equator, about this time. We had been, therefore, for some days looking out for him, and, as it was supposed, he would make a desperate resistance, preparations were made for his reception.

The North Star was inferior in size, force, and complement of men, carrying only twenty-six short carronades, with two long guns, being only 500 tons burden, and having a complement of 160 men. Moreover, the masts were of a new and untried timber; the mizen sprung, the

foremast decayed at the cap, the foretopsail-yard fished, and the rigging rotten; so that she was every way inferior in force and firmness to the armed slaver. Yet Captain Arabin was determined to board if they met, as well from a sense of duty, as because the crew would be allowed 10*l.* a-head on all recaptured slaves; and in case of success in this instance, would share 16,000*l.* prize-money, an inducement which government most judiciously add to other incentives, in this great cause of humanity. The crew, therefore, were exercised at the carronades every day; and as it was determined to run her aboard, the stoutest and most active young men, armed with cutlasses, were daily practised for that service, while the marines and boys with muskets, were ready to cover the attempt.

On Friday, May 22, being in lat. 4° 43′ 8″ and long. 26° 23′ W. we were talking of this pirate at breakfast, and the probability of meeting her in this place, when, in the midst of our conversation, a midshipman entered the cabin, and said in a hurried manner that a sail was visible to the N. W. on the larboard quarter. We immediately all rushed on deck, glasses were called for and set, and we distinctly saw a large ship of three masts, apparently crossing

our course. Various conjectures were now made as to who or what she was, but in a little time the trim and look of the vessel decided us that she was a foreigner; and it was the general opinion that she was either a large slaver or a pirate, or probably both, and Captain Arabin was strongly inclined to believe it was his friend the Spaniard, from the coast of Africa, for whom we had been looking out, or another of the same kind, cruising on the look-out for our East and West Indian trade, which are generally crossed by pirates in this latitude. The stranger now hauled her wind, changed her course, and seemed to bear directly down upon us. We clapped on studding and every other sail the ship could bear, and stood towards her; and as we were nearing every moment, there was a probability we should soon meet.

After about an hour standing towards us, she tacked, as if not liking our appearance, and alarmed at our approach, and stood away directly before the wind. We crowded all sail in chase. The breeze freshened, and at four bells we had neared so much that we had a distinct view of her hull, and we now were certain she was a slaver, and also perhaps a pirate, and that she had at least five or six hundred slaves on board. This opinion was formed on that saga-

city that a long experience on the coast of Africa, and a familiar acquaintance with such vessels had imparted. We were, therefore, all on the alert, exulting in the prospect of liberating so many fellow-creatures, and bartering and bargaining for our share of the ransom-money, for it seemed almost certain that she could not escape us. She resembled, however, a fox doubling in all directions, and every moment seeming to change her course to avoid us.

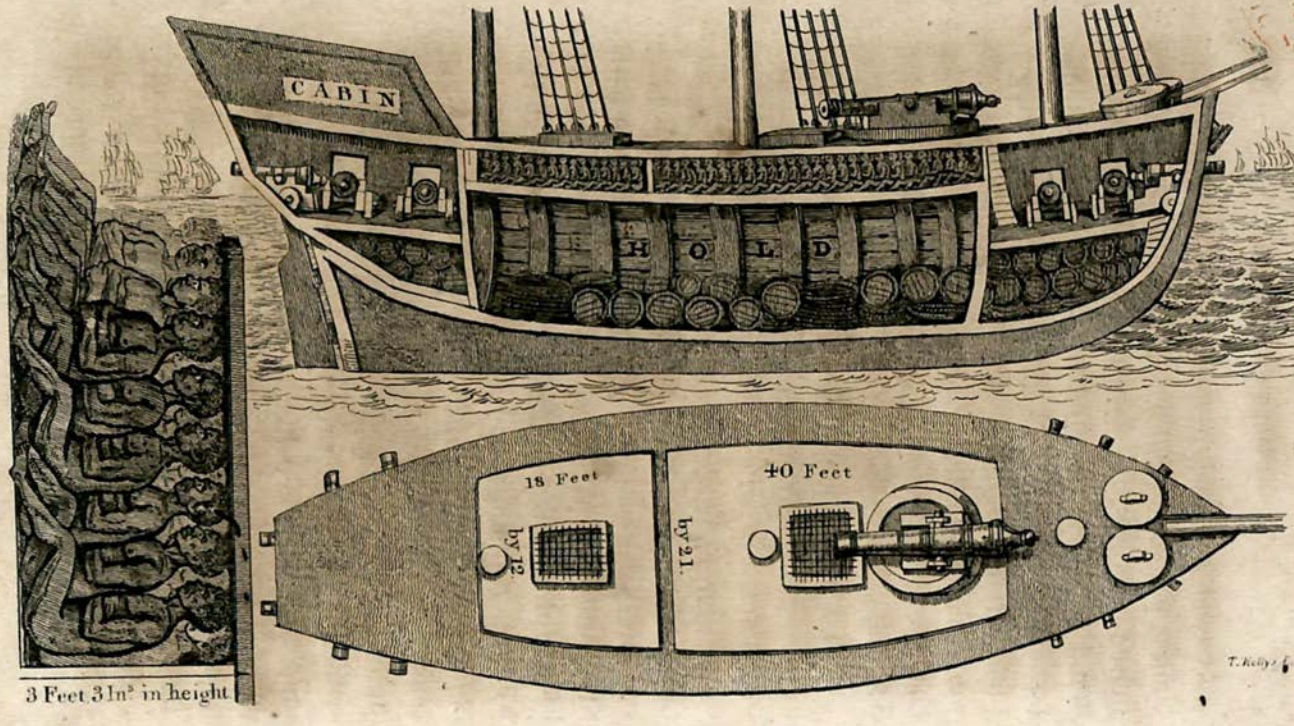
The captain now ordered a gun to be fired to leeward, and the English union flag to be hoisted; we had the wind right aft, and were running right down upon her, distant about four miles. She took no notice of our gun and flag, and another was fired with as little effect. Orders were then given that one of the long guns at the bows should be shotted and sent after her. We all crowded to the forecastle to witness the effect. The ball went ricochetting along the waves, and fell short of her stern; in a little time afterwards she hoisted a flag, which we perceived was Brazilian. Two shot more were sent after her with as little effect, and the wind again dying away, our coming up with her before dark seemed very doubtful. To increase the way of the ship, the long guns of the bows

were brought midships, but without effect; we were evidently dropping astern. We kept a sharp look-out with intense interest, leaning over the netting, and silently handing the glass to one another, as if a word spoken would impede our way. At length the shades of evening closed on us, and we applied night-glasses. For some time we kept her in view on the horizon, but about eight o'clock she totally disappeared.

All night we were pointing our glasses in the direction in which she lay, and caught occasional glimpses of her, and when morning dawned, we saw her like a speck on the horizon, standing due north. We followed in the same track, the breeze soon increased our way to eight knots, and we had the pleasure to find we were every moment gaining on her. We again sent long shot after her, but she only crowded the more sail to escape; and we observed her slinging her yards, that is, hanging them with additional cords, that they might be supported if the proper lifts were shot away.

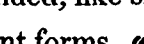
We could now discern her whole equipment; her gun streak was distinctly seen along the water, with eight ports of a side; and it was the general opinion that she was a French pirate and slaver, notorious for her depredations.

SECTIONS OF A SLAVE SHIP.



At twelve o'clock, we were entirely within gun-shot, and one of our long bow-guns was again fired at her. It struck the water alongside, and then, for the first time, she showed a disposition to stop. While we were preparing a second, she hove-to, and in a short time we were alongside her, after a most interesting chase of thirty hours, during which we ran 300 miles.

The first object that struck us, was an enormous gun, turning on a swivel, on deck, the constant appendage of a pirate; and the next, were large kettles for cooking, on the bows, the usual apparatus of a slaver. Our boat was now hoisted out, and I went on board with the officers. When we mounted her decks, we found her full of slaves. She was called the Veloz, commanded by Captain José Barbosa, bound to Bahia. She was a very broad-decked ship, with a mainmast, schooner-rigged, and behind her foremast was that large formidable gun, which turned on a broad circle of iron, on deck, and which enabled her to act as a pirate, if her slaving speculation had failed. She had taken in, on the coast of Africa, 336 males, and 226 females, making in all 562, and had been out seventeen days, during which she had thrown overboard fifty-five. The slaves were all en-

closed under grated hatchways, between decks. The space was so low, that they sat between each other's legs, and stowed so close together, that there was no possibility of their lying down, or at all changing their position, by night or day. As they belonged to, and were shipped on account of different individuals, they were all branded, like sheep, with the owners' marks of different forms,  , or , or . These were impressed under their breasts, or on their arms, and, as the mate informed me, with perfect indifference, "queimados pelo ferro quento—burnt with the red-hot iron." Over the hatchway stood a ferocious looking fellow, with a scourge of many twisted thongs in his hand, who was the slave-driver of the ship, and whenever he heard the slightest noise below, he shook it over them, and seemed eager to exercise it. I was quite pleased to take this hateful badge out of his hand, and I have kept it ever since, as a horrid memorial of reality, should I ever be disposed to forget the scene I witnessed.

As soon as the poor creatures saw us looking down at them, their dark and melancholy visages brightened up. They perceived something of sympathy and kindness in our looks, which they had not been accustomed to, and feeling instinctively that we were friends, they imme-

diately began to shout and clap their hands. One or two had picked up a few Portuguese words, and cried out "Viva! viva!" The women were particularly excited. They all held up their arms, and when we bent down and shook hands with them, they could not contain their delight; they endeavoured to scramble upon their knees, stretching up to kiss our hands, and we understood that they knew we were come to liberate them. Some, however, hung down their heads in apparently hopeless dejection; some were greatly emaciated, and some, particularly children, seemed dying.

But the circumstance which struck us most forcibly, was, how it was possible for such a number of human beings to exist, packed up and wedged together as tight as they could cram, in low cells, three feet high, the greater part of which, except that immediately under the grated hatchways, was shut out from light or air, and this when the thermometer, exposed to the open sky, was standing in the shade, on our deck, at 89°. The space between decks was divided into two compartments, 3 feet 3 inches high; the size of one was 16 feet by 18, and of the other 40 by 21; into the first were crammed the women and girls; into the second, the men and boys: 226 fellow-creatures were

thus thrust into one space 288 feet square; and 336 into another space 800 feet square, giving to the whole an average of 23 inches, and to each of the women not more than 13 inches, though many of them were pregnant. We also found manacles and fetters of different kinds, but it appears that they had all been taken off before we boarded.

The heat of these horrid places was so great, and the odour so offensive, that it was quite impossible to enter them, even had there been room. They were measured as above when the slaves had left them. The officers insisted that the poor suffering creatures should be admitted on deck to get air and water. This was opposed by the mate of the slaver, who, from a feeling that they deserved it, declared they would murder them all. The officers, however, persisted, and the poor beings were all turned up together. It is impossible to conceive the effect of this eruption—517 fellow-creatures of all ages and sexes, some children, some adults, some old men and women, all in a state of total nudity, scrambling out together to taste the luxury of a little fresh air and water. They came swarming up, like bees from the aperture of a hive, till the whole deck was crowded to suffocation, from stem to stern; so that it was impossible to imagine

where they could all have come from, or how they could have been stowed away. On looking into the places where they had been crammed, there were found some children next the sides of the ship, in the places most remote from light and air; they were lying nearly in a torpid state, after the rest had turned out. The little creatures seemed indifferent as to life or death, and when they were carried on deck, many of them could not stand.

After enjoying for a short time the unusual luxury of air, some water was brought; it was then that the extent of their sufferings was exposed in a fearful manner. They all rushed like maniacs towards it. No entreaties, or threats, or blows, could restrain them; they shrieked, and struggled, and fought with one another, for a drop of this precious liquid, as if they grew rabid at the sight of it. There is nothing which slaves, in the mid-passage, suffer from so much as want of water. It is sometimes usual to take out casks filled with sea water, as ballast, and when the slaves are received on board, to start the casks, and refill them with fresh. On one occasion, a ship from Bahia neglected to change the contents of the casks, and on the mid-passage found, to their horror, that they were filled with nothing but salt water.

All the slaves on board perished! We could judge of the extent of their sufferings from the afflicting sight we now saw. When the poor creatures were ordered down again, several of them came, and pressed their heads against our knees, with looks of the greatest anguish, at the prospect of returning to the horrid place of suffering below.

It was not surprising that they should have endured much sickness and loss of life, in their short passage. They had sailed from the coast of Africa on the 7th of May, and had been out but seventeen days, and they had thrown overboard no less than fifty-five, who had died of dysentery and other complaints, in that space of time, though they had left the coast in good health. Indeed, many of the survivors were seen lying about the decks in the last stage of emaciation, and in a state of filth and misery not to be looked at. Even-handed justice had visited the effects of this unholy traffic, on the crew who were engaged in it. Eight or nine had died, and at that moment six were in hammocks on board, in different stages of fever. This mortality did not arise from want of medicine. There was a large stock ostentatiously displayed in the cabin, with a manuscript book, containing directions as to

the quantities; but the only medical man on board to prescribe it was a black, who was as ignorant as his patients.

While expressing my horror at what I saw, and exclaiming against the state of this vessel for conveying human beings, I was informed by my friends, who had passed so long a time on the coast of Africa, and visited so many ships, that this was one of the best they had seen. The height, sometimes, between decks, was only eighteen inches; so that the unfortunate beings could not turn round, or even on their sides, the elevation being less than the breadth of their shoulders; and here they are usually chained to the decks, by the neck and legs. In such a place, the sense of misery and suffocation is so great, that the negroes, like the English in the black-hole at Calcutta, are driven to frenzy. They had, on one occasion, taken a slave vessel in the river Bonny: the slaves were stowed in the narrow space between decks, and chained together. They heard a horrid din and tumult among them, and could not imagine from what cause it proceeded. They opened the hatches, and turned them up on deck. They were manacled together, in twos and threes. Their horror may be well conceived, when they found a number of them

in different stages of suffocation; many of them were foaming at the mouth, and in the last agonies—many were dead. A living man was sometimes dragged up, and his companion was a dead body; sometimes, of the three attached to the same chain, one was dying, and another dead. The tumult they had heard, was the frenzy of those suffocating wretches in the last stage of fury and desperation, struggling to extricate themselves. When they were all dragged up, nineteen were irrecoverably dead. Many destroyed one another, in the hopes of procuring room to breathe; men strangled those next them, and women drove nails into each other's brains. Many unfortunate creatures, on other occasions, took the first opportunity of leaping overboard, and getting rid, in this way, of an intolerable life.

They often found the poor negroes impressed with the strongest terror at their deliverers. The slave dealers persuaded them that the English were cannibals, who only took them to eat them. When undeceived, their joy and gratitude were proportionately great. Sometimes, a mortal malady had struck them before they were captured, from which they never could recover. They used to lie down in the water of the lee scuppers, and notwithstanding every

care, pined away to skin and bone, wasted with fever and dysentery; and, when at length they were consigned to the deep, they were mere skeletons. Unlike other impressions, habit had not rendered these things familiar, or hardened the hearts of my companions. On the contrary, the scenes they had witnessed made them only more susceptible of pity on the present occasion; and the sympathy and kindness they now showed these poor slaves, did credit to the goodness of their hearts.

When I returned on board the frigate, I found the captain of the slaver pacing the deck in great agitation; sometimes clasping his hands, and occasionally requesting a drink of water; and when asked whether he would have any other refrehment, he replied, turning his head and twisting his mouth, with an expression of intense annoyance, "nada, nada—nothing, nothing." Meantime, his papers were rigidly examined, to ascertain if they bore out his story. He said that he was a Brazilian, from Bahia, and that his traffic was strictly confined to the south of the line, where, by treaty, it was yet lawful; that he made Bengo bay, on the coast of Angola, nine degrees south of the line, traded along that coast, and took in all his slaves at Cabinda, and was returning directly home; that his ship

had only received on board the number allowed by law, which directs that five slaves may be taken in for every two tons; and that his complement was under that allowance. All this, his chart and log corresponded with. As the tale, however, could be easily fabricated, and papers were written to correspond, a strict scrutiny was made into other circumstances. Some of the poor slaves said they came from Badagry, a place in six degrees north latitude. Two of the crew, whose persons were recognized by some of our people, confessed they were left at Whida, by another ship, where they had been seen; and above all, the slave captain had endeavoured to escape by every means in his power, as conscious of his guilt; and it was not till after a persevering chase of 300 miles that he was at length taken, and that too, sailing in a northerly direction, when his course to Bahia would have been south-west. He said, in reply, that the slaves might have been originally from Badagry, and sent, as is usual, to Cabinda, where he bought them; that the two men entered at Cabinda, to which they had been brought in a Spanish ship from Whida; and finally, that he did not bring to when required, because he imagined the North Star to be one of the large pirates which infest these seas;

whom he endeavoured to escape from by every means in his power; and in fact in his log, our ship was designated "hum briganda." All this was plausible, and might be true.

The instructions sent to king's ships as to the manner of executing the treaty of Brazil, are very ambiguous. They state in one place that "no slave ship is to be stopped to the south of the line, on any pretext whatever." Yet in another, a certain latitude is allowed, if there is reason to suspect that the slaves on board "were taken in, to the north." By the first, the ship could not be detained at all, and it was doubtful if there was just reason for the second. Even if there were the strongest grounds for capturing and sending her to Sierra Leone for adjudication, where the nearest mixed commission sat, a circumstance of very serious difficulty occurred. It would take three weeks, perhaps a month or more, to beat up to windward to this place, and the slaves had not water for more than half that time, and we could not supply her. A number had already died, and we saw the state of frenzy to which the survivors were almost driven, from the want of this element. On a former occasion, a prize of the North Star, sent to Sierra Leone, had lost more than 100, out of a very small complement,

while beating up the coast, notwithstanding every care; and it seemed highly probable that in this case but few could survive. Under these doubtful circumstances, then, it appeared more legal and even more humane to suffer them to proceed on their course to Bahia, where it is probable, after all, the remnant left alive would be finally sent, after an investigation by the commissioners, as having been taken in, within the limits of legal traffic. It was with infinite regret, therefore, we were obliged to restore his papers to the captain, and permit him to proceed, after nine hours' detention and close investigation. It was dark when we separated, and the last parting sounds we heard from the unhallowed ship, were the cries and shrieks of the slaves, suffering under some bodily infliction.

It should appear, then, that notwithstanding the benevolent and persevering exertions of England, this horrid traffic in human flesh is nearly as extensively carried on as ever, and under circumstances, perhaps, of a more revolting character. The very shifts at evasion, the necessity for concealment, and the desperate hazard, cause inconvenience and sufferings to the poor creatures in a very aggravated degree. The restriction of slaving to the south of the line was in fact nugatory, and evaded on

all occasions. The number of slaves recaptured and liberated by our cruisers, appears a large amount; and certainly, as far as it goes, has rendered most important services to humanity. Captain Arabin was on the station three years; and from August, 1826, to May, 1829, visited vessels, having on board 3894 slaves; of these, nine bearing the Brazilian flag, three the Spanish, one the Portuguese, and one the French and Dutch, in all fourteen, containing 2465 slaves, were detained, and sent to Sierra Leone for adjudication. The whole number captured by all our cruisers, and afterwards emancipated, for nine years, from June, 1819 to July, 1828, was 13,281,* being about 1400, on an average, each year. During that period, it is supposed that nearly 100,000 human beings were annually transported as slaves from different parts of the coast, of which, more than 43,000 were in one year legally imported into one city alone. It is deeply to be regretted, therefore, that the proportion of the good to the evil is so small. On the 23d of March, 1830, however, the permission to Brazil will expire; the whole of this ransacked and harassed coast will then be protected, and every slaver on any part of it, will be seized and treated as a pirate.

* See Parliamentary Reports.

Two difficulties, however, will yet remain, which ought to be removed for the final and effectual prevention of this traffic. By treaties with Spain, Portugal, the Netherlands, and Brazil, mutual right of search is allowed to the cruisers of each nation, and mixed commissions for adjudication reside at Sierra Leone, Havannah, Rio de Janeiro, and Surinam; but no right of mutual search exists with France or North America, and slaves are continually transported with impunity under their flags. Surely, if nations are sincere in this great cause of God and man, they will no longer suffer the little etiquettes of national vanity to oppose it.

It also happens that the right of capture is cunningly evaded by the slavers, as vessels are only liable to seizure when they have actually slaves on board. Ships frequently enter the mouths of rivers, or other parts of the coast, having every apparatus on board for the reception of slaves, which are collected in the vicinity, and ready to embark on the first opportunity. This is known to our ships, who often watch them for a considerable time, while the slaver remains quietly and securely at anchor. When from any cause the attention of the cruiser is called away, the slaves are all embarked in one night; and when the cruiser

resumes his station, the slaver has disappeared with her full cargo. The cruiser has little chance of overtaking the slaver, even though she should be in the immediate neighbourhood. The superior class of vessels employed by the Spaniards, is so well calculated for escape in this way, that our ships of war have no chance of overtaking them at sea. To defeat this, an additional article in the treaty with the Netherlands provides, that all vessels are to be considered as slavers, and treated as such, when they have an apparatus evidently intended for the reception of slaves, even though none be found on board.*

"If therefore, when the whole coast of Africa is protected from this commerce, and no vessel of any nation is permitted to traffic on any part of it, the right of mutual search is acknowledged, and acted on by all civilized nations,

* The following is the additional article to the treaty with the Netherlands in 1818: "That any vessel hovering on the coast within one degree west, and between twenty degrees north and twenty south, or at anchor within any bay or creek, and having her hatches fitted with gratings instead of being closed like merchants; having more divisions or bulk-head than necessary; having spare planks to make a second deck, having shackles, bolts, or handcuffs; having a greater number of water-casks or of meal-tubs, or two or more copper boilers, or an unreasonable quantity of rice or farinha; — the proof of these to be considered *prima facie* evidence of her actual employment in the trade, though she may not have slaves on board, and be sufficient to constitute her a lawful prize."

and every ship found with the damning proofs on board be confiscated, and the crews treated as pirates, then, and not till then, can we hope to see this horrid traffic finally abolished.

The weather was now becoming very sultry, the thermometer stood at 82°, and the air was breathless. We were on the confines of the two trades, where the meeting currents cause stagnant air, when a disagreeable accident occurred, adding another proof of the danger of sudden cold immersion, after being excited with violent exertion. The midshipmen were engaged in some very athletic sports on deck, and one of them, being excessively warm, went into the chains, and had a bucket of cold sea-water thrown upon him. He was instantly seized with a fit, and fell down in a state of insensibility. He was bled with some relief, but remained for a long time in a torpid state; and when he slowly recovered, he lost all memory of what had happened to him, and had not the most distant recollection of the exercise, or the bucket of water. There seems to be a very serious difference between the transition to sudden cold, from the excitement produced by a hot bath, and by violent exercise; the one is done every day with impunity, and the other is highly dangerous. This was the

second instance we had known of it since we left England; one proved fatal, and the other very nearly so.

Sharks now for the first time began to swim round us, and I had an opportunity of correcting an opinion I had long entertained, that this fish always turns on his back when he seizes his prey. One very large, about seven feet long, of a brown-buff colour, with the extremities and his fins bordered with white, followed just under our stern, with the greatest ease and familiarity. When a bait was dropped down, he sailed up to it on the surface of the water, looked up at us, and then took it as kindly and gently as if we were feeding a pet; he never changed his swimming position but once, and then he inclined his head a little to one side, but never showed any disposition to turn on his back, as is usually said. He gave an extraordinary instance of his muscular strength. He at length gorged a hook, made of a bar of iron as thick as a quill, and we all prepared to haul him on deck, and examine him. Knowing his powerful force, the boatswain let down a rope to hitch him in a loop, and told us to watch if he moved his tail. When the loop touched his nose, he made the slightest motion with his tail, and snapped the

thick iron hook across, as if it had been the shank of a clay pipe. In the bustle, a hat fell into the sea. Though he had the remains of one large hook in his maw, and another was just torn from his side; he immediately seized it, and went off, and we saw it in his mouth, without swallowing it, as one of the sailors said, "like a quid of tobacco in his jaw."

The crew in general seemed to entertain, and very justly, a strong apprehension of meeting this voracious fish in the water. There was, however, one man on board, who had, on various occasions, showed the most extraordinary intrepidity among sharks; he was an Irishman, of the name of Burke. He was a careless fellow, and had been sent from the Maidstone as worthless and incorrigible. Captain Arabin discerned something more in his character; found him a person of light and frolicsome humour, but a good sailor, and, moreover, a man of the kindest heart, and the most intrepid humanity. This he evinced on the coast of Africa, on several occasions. Whenever a man fell overboard, Burke leaped after him, and saved him before a boat could be lowered. The river Bonny was full of the most ravenous sharks. On one occasion, a boat's crew were bringing the corpse of their captain on shore, to be buried.

His feet projected over the gunwale, and a shark seized them. In trying to save the body, the boat upset, and the whole crew were devoured by them except one, whom Burke saved, by leaping fearlessly into the sea, and supporting him till they were taken up by another boat. On another occasion, in the river of Sierra Leone, where it was full of sharks, a sailor fell overboard from the commodore's ship. None of his own shipmates had courage to attempt to save him; but Burke, who saw the man struggling in the water at some distance, immediately leaped from the deck of the North Star, swam to him through these ferocious fish, and supported him till they were both taken up by a boat. Commodore Collier, who was looking on, was affected even to tears at this extraordinary instance of magnanimous philanthropy, and sent him some dollars. Had he lived in the days of the ancient Romans, his fellow-citizens would have presented him with a rostral or civic crown, and erected a statue to his memory. The name of Burke seems destined to denote the extremes of evil and good. One man who bore it, is stigmatized as a fearful destroyer of human life, the other distinguished as its most intrepid preserver.

On the 8th of June we crossed the Tropic of

Cancer, and fell in with those masses of floating weeds* which form so striking a feature in the Atlantic. An immense belt of sea, supposed to extend from 18 to 30 degrees of north latitude, is frequently covered over with a vegetable production, which sometimes appears in long ridges with furrows between, and sometimes in detached insulated portions. In going to Rio we met it in the first state, and for two days passed through it; on returning we now saw it in the latter, the sea studded over, in all directions, with broad floating masses. From this circumstance, this particular part of the Atlantic is called by the Spaniards and Portuguese, "Mar do sargaço," or "the weedy sea." When it forms ridges, it is generally of a dark yellow or light brown, more or less in a state of decomposition, and looks like bran thrown upon the water; when in masses or detached smaller portions, it is more young and perfect. What I had seen before was all disorganized, but I had now a line thrown out, and having entangled a quantity of it, I examined several specimens of it from the different patches which floated by.

It was perfectly fresh and in full and vigourous vegetation. It consisted of one long fibrous

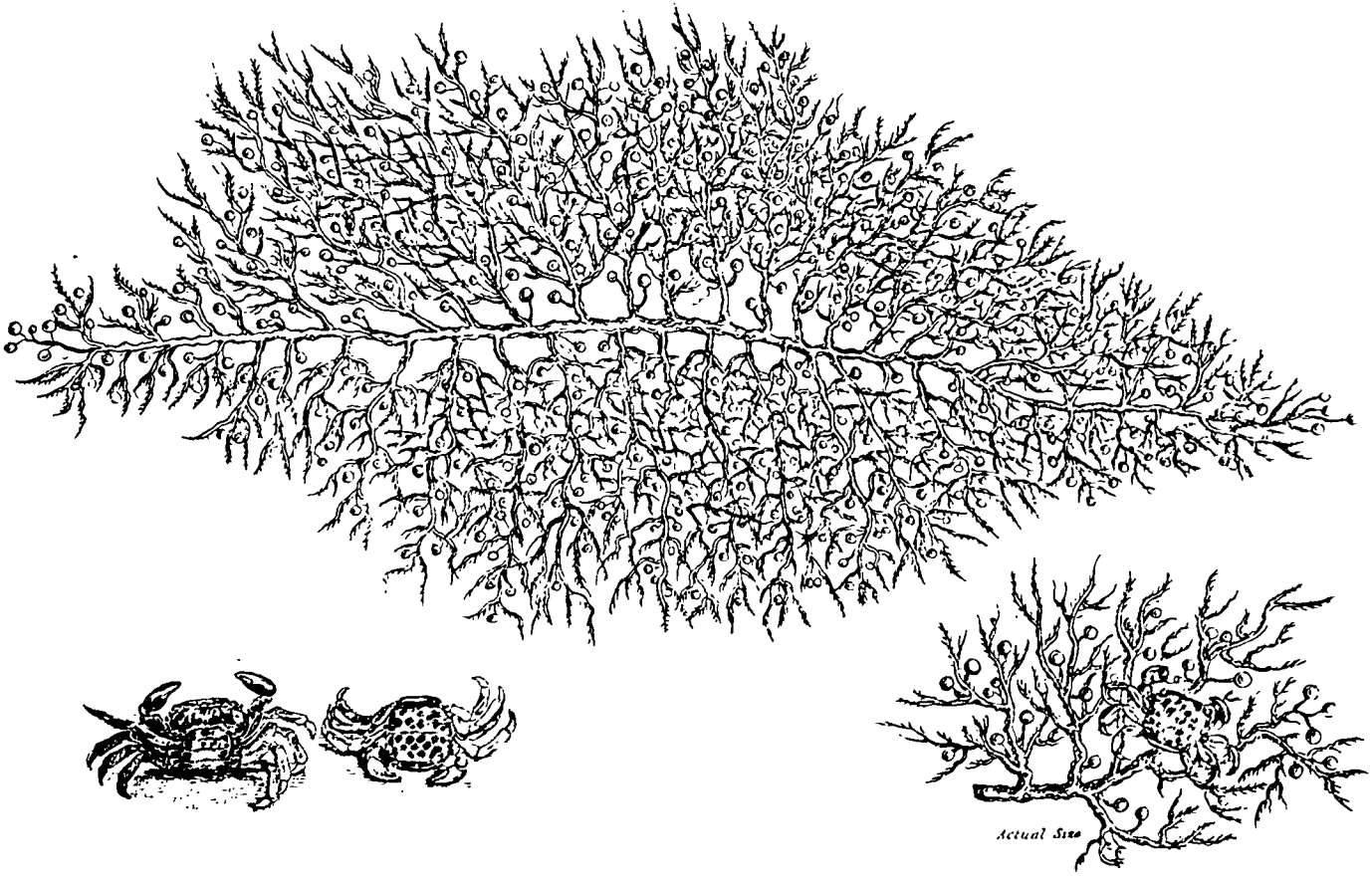
* Fucus natans.

stem, from which smaller lateral ones ramified at irregular intervals. These were covered with ligulate or strap-shaped leaves, about two inches long and one-eighth of an inch broad, irregularly serrated, and at the axilla, or angle made by the leaves and stem, were small spheroidal pods, not quite so large as peas, on short footstalks, and generally two together. These pods contained no seeds, or other substance, and seemed merely vesicles filled with air, forming an apparatus by which the plant floated on the surface, like that which nature provides for the utricularia and others. Several of the vesicles were encased in a beautiful reticulated coraline substance, which, when the part they covered dried and shrunk, retained its orbicular shape in a curious manner. Attached to the leaves and stems, was a variety of small serpulæ and other testaceous incrustations, and entangled in them were shrimps and a very pretty species of small crab, with a bright mottled tortoise shell, and vivid green eyes. The shell was quite hard, and the animal vigorous and lively, so that it seemed to have arrived at its full growth, which was not larger than a flat kidney-bean. I carefully examined several tufts, and could not discover the trace of any thing like a root, nor any fracture in the leading stem, from whence

it might have been detached, but the whole plant seemed to be in the exact and perfect state in which it originally grew. When spread out, it exhibited the appearance of one principal stalk terminated at each end by branches coming to a point and forming an irregular ellipse.

The natural history of this fucus is curious, and its origin not yet ascertained. It is called the gulf-stream weed, because it is seen carried by that extraordinary current, and scattered over the Atlantic. The general opinion is, that it grows at the bottom of the sea; that there are two great banks covered with it, one to the west of the Azores, between 25° and 36°, and the other between 22° and 26°, or eighty leagues from the Bahamas; and that these are the fertile submarine beds on which this abundant plant originally vegetates; from these it is detached by molluscæ and fishes feeding on the stems, and cutting them across; or sometimes, and more usually, that the violent agitation of the water itself disturbs and separates them, and then the air-vessels support them to the surface.

The supposition, however, of these banks is, I believe, entirely gratuitous, nor has their existence been ever ascertained; even if it were, it is not easy to conceive how the weed at such a depth could be disturbed by the agitation of the


Actual Size

water above. It is known, by the report of pearl-divers, that the undulations of the most violent storms are not at all perceptible below eighty or ninety fathom, and the weed is found covering the sea in many places where lines of two or three hundred could not reach the bottom. But what seems decisive against such an hypothesis is, that it is not possible to detect any appearance of a fracture or separation of the stalk in the greater number, and when it is seen it is evidently of some smaller branch, and not of the leading stem. It is much more probable that it is generated as it floats, and never was attached to any root. The whole plant seems intended by nature for such a mode of existence. The air-vessels are in immense abundance, and seem formed for no other purpose, than as buoys to support it on the surface. Several other vegetables are furnished with a similar apparatus to bear up their important parts of fructification to the atmosphere; but this is the only one, as far as I know, thus provided with a mechanism, for the entire suspension of all its parts.*

* Francisco de Ulloa mentions the particular mechanism of these weeds:—"And for a space of fifty leagues we always found swimming on the sea certain flottes of weeds, bearing seed and full of gourds." cap. 2.

Many vegetable productions, however, resemble it in its wandering state of existence. Different kinds of conferva are found in the lakes of England, from the size of a walnut to that of a melon, floating about loosely from shore to shore as the winds propel them, and one curious species is still more erratic.*

This vast weedy sea had been a cause of terror to ancient navigators, who, when they came on its confines, were afraid to penetrate its dense mass, lest their ships should be entangled and detained by it. It was, however, one of the objects of alarm that Columbus was not daunted by. He fell in with it 360 leagues west of the Canary islands, and did not hesitate to push through it. On examining some tufts of it, he found the little crab which I have mentioned, and preserved it, it seems, with great care, as one of the first discoveries of his voyage.

Among the benefits conferred by this weed, is the number of fish to which it affords sustenance. We had a tub full of young turtles on deck, and they seemed greatly revived by having a mess of it every day thrown in to them; and one morning we perceived a large one in the

* Conferva vagabunda.

sea, basking in the midst of one of the masses. We were lying our course with a steady breeze, and could not stop to take him up.

Our water was now reduced to twenty-six days, and all our fresh provisions nearly exhausted, and it was necessary to touch at the Azores to take in a supply, so that we were daily looking out for them. The gulf weed had now entirely disappeared, but its place was supplied by a floating substance, altogether as extraordinary. On the evening of June 16, in lat. 35°. 44′. N., long. 33°. 1′. W., shoals of mollusca,* consisting of a jelly-like substance of various sizes and shapes, and forming gregarious masses, were seen surrounding the ship in as great abundance as the weed. A sailor was let down a-stern, who picked up as many as filled a bucket. On examination, they appeared firm gelatinous lumps, of a hard gristly texture, some three, some four inches long, and two broad, of a quadrangular shape and hyaline hue, having appendices attached to them, of different forms and sizes, some of which resembled a hawk's head, with a spherical opaque ball inside, of a dark brown colour below, and yellow

* Mollusca salpa.

above, giving it the appearance of a bird's head with a large eye. Others were exceedingly imperfect, resembling a misshapen lump of jelly, with a small protuberance, so as to give the appearance of any thing, rather than of an organized living animal. In every one, however, was a membrane, either brown or purple, which appeared to be an intestine or a stomach, which opened by an aperture at both ends; but which the mollusca seemed to have the power of closing so firmly, as sometimes to obliterate it. Some of them were exceedingly elegant; the lucid jelly, laced with purple or other vivid hues, with which the intestine was tinged, reflected the light of the evening sun with a prismatic lustre, quite beautiful, as they floated in congregated masses past the ship. They were occasionally accompanied with more organized medusæ, of various shapes, but they did not seem to possess their stinging properties; we all handled them, and did not feel any of the sensation produced by the urtica marina. I preserved some of them in a glass, to ascertain if they were phosphorescent, but neither in the sound state in which they were taken, nor the decomposition into which they afterwards fell, did they emit any luminous

particles. Next day they were in a state of solution so offensive, that we threw them all overboard.

It was not easy, at first, to conceive for what purpose these very imperfect beings could have been formed, and in such abundance, as to cover the whole surface of the sea; but we were soon satisfied that nature produces nothing in vain, and Providence has its own uses for every created thing. Presently a number of whales and grampuses appeared, pursuing this bait, and wallowing in the abundance of their food. The mollusca, therefore, is called by the Icelanders, walfiscoas, or whale's provender. They came tumbling and rolling along on all sides of us, forming large circles, and sporting round the ship. One of them was fifty or sixty feet long, and was first discovered by his blowing or ejecting water from his nostrils, in a spout, which sometimes formed a spray in the air, and sometimes descended in an arch, like the stream ejected from the tube of a fire engine. He then rose half way out of the water, his head, back, and tail, with a large part of his body, being very distinct above the surface; and while the sun glittered in strong reflexion from his oily sides, he shot close beside us, and seemed indeed "that great beast leviathan,

whom God of his creatures created hugest, that swim the ocean streams." In this way he proceeded in foam, and left a long wake behind him, while he performed a circle, in a few minutes, of several miles in circumference, and then returned again to the ship, as to some companion from whom he was unwilling to separate. After sporting about us for some time, and finding perhaps his mistake, he again shot away, and was lost in the distant horizon.

On the evening of Friday, 19th of June, St. Michael's was seen rising before us, enveloped in mist; and as it was too late to land, we stood on and off all night. Towards morning, the clouds descended in torrents of rain till sun-rise, when it cleared, and we saw the island close alongside, glittering in the humid light. We made the land near Cape Mosteyros, where the volcanic island of Sabrina had appeared and disappeared. No trace of it was visible; but its former existence was marked by the shoals which lie just under the surface, over which the sea beats. We coasted from thence along the whole southern shore. The high land in the centre was covered, like Madeira, with a very dense mist, terminated by an abrupt horizontal line, half way up the highlands; all above dark and hidden, and all below bright and revealed.

As we advanced the clouds cleared away, and the interior of the island became visible. It presented a succession of conical hills, cultivated up to their summits as far as the eye could reach; forming a strong contrast to Madeira. In the one, the whole was a rich cultivated soil, covered with crops, unshadowed by a single tree; in the other, timber seemed the only production, indicating that its title to the name of Madeira is nearly as strong at the present day, as at the time of its discovery.

Towards mid-day we arrived off the town of Del Gado, where a number of ships were lying; and among the rest, the Undaunted frigate, Captain Clifford, who had not long arrived. I went on shore with an officer, and we proceeded to the house of Mr. Reid, the consul. The town we found in a considerable state of excitement. About 1200 Miguelite troops had gone to Terceira, where they were not permitted to land; and from thence proceeded to St. Michael's. They had been led to expect, it was said, the plunder of the first island; but being disappointed, they came prepared, it was apprehended, to realize their hopes in the second. Here, also, if they had any such idea, their object was defeated. The people of Terceira are generally attached to Dom Miguel,

and the garrison, only, constitutionalists; on the contrary, the garrison only, at St. Michael's, adhere to the new order of things, while the people are all attached to the constitution. They thought it necessary, therefore, to enrol a body of 3000 militia, to keep in check the regular troops, and protect themselves from the threatened depredation. Notwithstanding this restraint, the garrison were so unruly, and showed so hostile a disposition to the English, that the consul thought it prudent to mount a brass field-piece before his house, and to get some armed friends to reside with him; supposing it possible that the soldiers might endeavour to put their threats into execution. He also wrote for a ship of war, which might be ready in case of need, to protect the persons and property of British subjects; and the Undaunted was despatched, and had arrived a few days before.

But a circumstance had just occurred which had thrown the people into great agitation. The Briton, an English ship, had been freighted with a cargo of tobacco, beef, and other things, for Terceira, but was intercepted some leagues from the island, by a blockading ship of war, who fired into her, took her as a lawful prize, and sent her into St. Michael's. The

captain brought with him an extraordinary story; that the French and English government had intimated to Dom Miguel that he must abdicate, and that 10,000 troops were about to embark from Cork for Portugal, under the command of the Marquis of Anglesea, to compel him. Absurd as this news was, it was received with avidity by the people. They have no press on the island, but the story was translated into Portuguese, and a number of copies of it, in manuscript, were circulated about; and every one was eager to transcribe it. It was shown to us as a thing of which there was no doubt; and I was deemed most unreasonably incredulous to question the truth of it.

A strong sensation was, in consequence, excited among the people, who began to evince their feelings. The constitutional hymn was heard every night through the street; the people and soldiers were constantly coming into collision. Nine respectable persons had been arrested and thrown into prison, the evening before our arrival, for some indiscreet display of their sentiments. We met groups of soldiers under arms, who seemed to show a determined hostility to the people about them; and the whole island was approaching to a state of commotion, from this wild fabrication.

The consul invited us to visit his seat in the country, for which purpose two donkeys were brought to the door. The saddles were stuffed with pads, having cross sticks for pummels, which stuck up before and behind like the horns of a lady's saddle in England. On this we sat like women, with one leg over the cross sticks, while a boy behind with a long pole and a goad at the end, pricked them on and followed in a trot, shouting and directing them with his voice, which they obeyed with more than the sagacity of an ass. Whenever we came to a doubtful turn, the boy behind shouted out "esquerda," or "destra," and our intelligent animals immediately turned to the left or to the right, as they were ordered, with the most unerring obedience.

The cluster of islands called the Azores is the most northern of those which dot the Atlantic. They were discovered, like Madeira, by an accident. In the middle of the fifteenth century, Joshua Vanderberg, of Bruges, in Flanders, was making a voyage to Lisbon, and was driven by a strong easterly wind so far to the west, that he fell in with this group of islands. When he had refitted he resumed his voyage, and on his arrival at Lisbon, boasted of his discovery. As the Portuguese were at this time the most

enterprising mariners in Europe, they immediately availed themselves of his intelligence; and before he could apprize his own government, or fit out a ship, they anticipated him, and took possession of the islands. They found on them no human inhabitants, but a vast number of birds occupied the islands, particularly hawks; they therefore called them the Açores, or the islands of hawks.*

The tardy Flemings, it appears, at length sent people also to profit by the discovery of their countryman, Vanderberg. The newly-discovered group was conferred, in 1466, by the King of Portugal, on his sister, the Duchess of Burgundy, and she sent out colonies under Job de Huerter. They settled principally at S. Jorge and Fayal, two of the islands, from whence the group was early called Flemengos. The high

* Cordeyro, in his Insulana, says nothing of the original discovery by the Flemings, though he mentions their subsequent occupation of S. Jorge and Fayal. He admits, however, that Prince Henry had received some previous notice of their existence, and sent out two expeditions expressly to find them. Some attribute this knowledge to ancient charts in his possession, but the worthy ecclesiastic himself believed it was a divine revelation communicated to him, which only could account for the constancy with which he sought till he found them. "O devoto Infante, teve alguma revelacão ou inspiracão divino, em que com a constançia que veremos perseverou em mandar descubrir taes Ilhas." (Ins. 97.) The revelacão was probably the communication of the Fleming.

state of cultivation to which they have attained, and the very fair countenances of many of the peasantry, strongly attest this Flemish colonization.

The group of the Azores consists of nine islands, of which Angra, in Terceira, is the capital, and residence of the civil governor; but St. Michael's is the most productive, and the seat of the bishop. It is thirty-five miles long, from east to west, and about ten broad, from north to south. A census was taken about ten years ago, which gave it a population of 80,000; but as this was made by ecclesiastics, who do not include young persons under the age of confession, it was supposed to be far below the actual number, which is now known to be 105,000 people of all ages. They are distinguished for their moral qualities; they are simple, honest, and good natured; and the high state of cultivation in which they keep their island, attests at once their skill and industry—not an acre of arable soil is lost, and both European and tropical vegetation flourishes, side by side, in the most luxuriant manner. Wheat and bananas, figs and cabbages, oranges and potatoes, are equally abundant and excellent in their kind.

All England attests the reputation of their

oranges, and the increasing demand is so great, that it has effected a surprising alteration in the revenues of the farmers. A gentleman, who lived near the consul's, possessed a large laranjeira, or orangery, which he prized so little that he refused to sell the fruit, and invited every one who chose to come and take them. The foreign demand, however, became so great, that he was at length prevailed on to send them to England, and last year he realized 4,000 crowns, from the produce of a garden, that never before produced him a vintem.

The island is much indebted to its humidity for its fertility. Its summit is generally enveloped all day in mist, which at night descends in rain, and in the morning rises to its former elevation, leaving the sky below clear and serene, and the earth fertile and verdant to a beautiful degree. This humidity contributes also to the rapid decomposition of volcanic matter, which the natives pound, as the farmers treat bones in England, for manure, and in that state, when acted on by air and water, it soon becomes a rich mould.

Among the happy exemptions from evil, is that from the evil of the slave trade. There is not, I am informed, a slave on any of the islands, nor did I see a black face, or the

descendant of one, at St. Michael's. The effects of free labour are not only visible in the soil, but in those who cultivate it. The people are not the same flabby, sallow, indolent race, as their countrymen in Brazil, who lead themselves a life of idleness, and rely for support on the labour of their negroes. They are, on the contrary, an upright, muscular, well-knit peasantry, whose nerves are strung, and whose blood is purified by toil; and their children are an uncommonly fine chubby race of little beings; we saw several of them running about the roads and fields, generally almost naked, and some actually so. They were fat, fair, and good-humoured, with curly hair, and very handsome laughing faces, not at all resembling the lean, uncomely, dark-visaged, ill-tempered children, we saw in Brazil, kicking and scratching the negroes who carried them about, and habitually exercising on all occasions their little passions with impunity, on those whom they knew were their slaves, and obliged to bear it. Some of these children were so fair, that we took it for granted they were descendants of the Flemings.

That the people of St. Michael's are very prolific, was evinced by the number of children we every where saw, and the industry with which it was necessary to cultivate the soil for

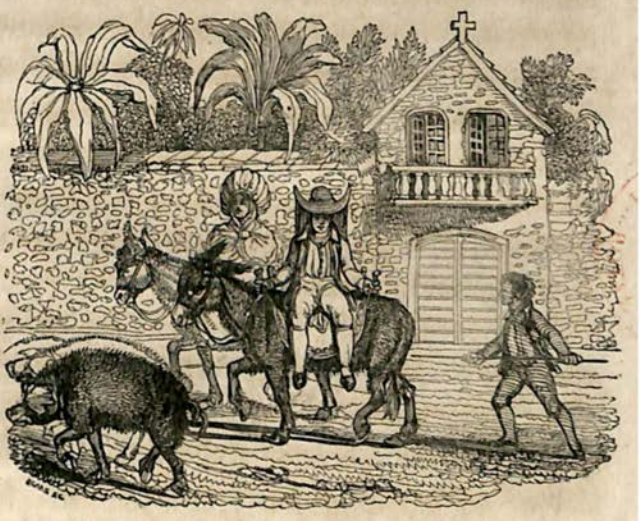
their support. In further proof of it, the island furnishes an annual surplus, which emigrates to Brazil, and forms the most valuable part of the population where they settle. Dom John was so convinced of the excellence of their moral and physical qualities, that by an alvará issued in 1813, he invited the people of the Azores to emigrate, located them on lands as agriculturists, and to induce them the more, he exempted them from military service in the line, and did not even call on them to be enrolled in the militia, if they did not wish it themselves. About 200 people leave St. Michael's every year for this purpose, and their robust persons and industrious habits are an important acquisition, where every white free man is so valuable.

Their dress is distinguished by two peculiarities, the caps of the men, and the hoods of the women; the caps are called carapoos, and are of a very singular shape. They consist of a head-piece, having a square leaf protruding before, and a long flap hanging down behind. The leaf is turned up at the ears, and terminated at the corners, by two sharp projections, which resemble cows' horns; the whole is usually covered with blue velveteen, and is very heavy and cumbrous. They readily assign reasons of

convenience for every part of this singular head-piece. They let down the flap behind, they say, to protect them from the wind when it is cold, and from the sun when it is hot, in which latter case the leaf is curled up at the ears, that the breeze may ventilate them. When motives of expediency induce them to throw up the flap, it is received upon the horns, where it hangs, like the festoons of a curtain, on a hook. These, and sundry other advantages, a man pointed out to me while he held his cap in his hand, with as much seriousness and precision, as if he was demonstrating a problem or a diagram in Euclid.

The hoods of the women are of an enormous size, nearly as large as the rest of the cloak, and when thrown over them, they sit enveloped, as if within the calash of a chaise.

The animal used for journeying, is always an ass, caparisoned as I have described; and peasants going to market are frequently accompanied by pigs of an enormous size, nearly as large as the asses they ride. They exactly resemble the long-legged breed of this animal, so well known in the county of Kilkenny, in Ireland, and which I had seen no where else before. It is probable they were originally brought from thence, as the distance between



Peasants of St. Michael proceeding to Del Gado.

the Azores and the south of Ireland is comparatively short, and the intercourse frequent.

The English form a respectable residence here, of about one hundred persons, who, with the crews of the ships in the road, compose a congregation of from two to three hundred people, for whom, formerly, divine service was never performed. This deficiency was remedied by Dom John, who permitted chapels to be built for English congregations in his dominions elsewhere, as well as in Brazil. A large edifice for protestant worship is now erected outside the town, but not yet opened for divine service; but an English chaplain, resident on the island, performs, in the meantime, all necessary duties.

The constitutional spirit, and the intelligence which accompanies it, are strong in the islands, particularly at St. Michael's; and if I were to judge from the short conversations I have had with some of the inhabitants, it is likely that knowledge and improvement, and liberal opinions, will increase. One gentleman was particularly intelligent. He was engaged in the constitutional cause, and had sailed in the Isabella frigate to Madeira, to give his aid to the island; but finding it had surrendered, he proceeded to Terceira. As this was blockaded, he could not land, but disembarked at

St. Michael's, where he remained unknown. I had heard a high account of his moral character. I never met a man of more pleasing manners, or more gentlemanly address. Though young, he had travelled much, and spoke English, French, and Italian, with fluency. He had also stored his mind with a variety of information, and I was indebted to him for much interesting knowledge. I parted from him with great esteem and good-will, and with feelings of deep regret, that such men, so capable of rendering the best service to their country, should be the proscribed and persecuted fugitives.

In contemplating the various groups of islands that are scattered over the Pacific and the Atlantic, it should seem that however similar in their present appearance, they owe their origin to very different causes; the formation of the one was the slow and patient labour of minute insects, that of the other was the rapid and sudden explosion of volcanic fire. That this is the origin of the Atlantic groups, I believe there is no doubt. Some of the islands of Cape Verde are masses of cinders and calcined rocks. One of the former is called Fogo, or fire, which at this day rages with such violence, as to force the inhabitants in terror to leave the island for a season. The Peak of

Island of
St MICHAEL'S
one of the AZORES with the Volcanic appearance.

Teneriffe, in the Canaries, is nothing more than a vast chimney, elevated above the surface of the sea, through which an active volcano still finds vent, and the furnaces of ignited matter glowing beneath, pour out their liquified and overflowing contents through it. The island of Ascension is a heap of cinders and ashes, but exhibits, in a striking manner, their conversion into fertilized soil. Some of the calcined rock is so soft, that a stick may be thrust several feet into it, and it is rapidly decomposing by the action of the atmosphere. A few years ago it was uninhabitable; but some free blacks transported to it, and, aided by the garrison, have now elaborated this burnt rock into productive mould, and green patches of vegetation are beginning to cover the surface of the island.

But the Azores, even in the memory of man now living, and in our own times, have displayed all the phenomena which, in the other islands, are hidden in remote ages. They all show, more or less, undeniable traces of their recent origin, but St. Michael's in particular is a wonderful proof of it. The face of the island presents a succession of conical hills, and where the industry of the inhabitants has not covered them with mould, masses of rocks appear in all stages of calcination, modified by the ingredients

of which they are composed; some light and porous lava, some vitrified from the presence of silex and alkali, some metallic, and exactly resembling the slag or scoria thrown out as the refuse of a lead or iron furnace. In the interior of the island, is a chain of circular lakes, extending from one end to the other, each of them apparently a basin of water, which filled up the crater of an extinct volcano.

That the action which first propelled the island from the bottom of the sea is still going on, is evident from the caldeiros, or hot springs, which boil up in different places, of a heat so intense, as to cook eggs and other culinary substances put into them in a short time; and columns of smoke are continually seen issuing from the tops and sides of mountains, either ascending in magnificent pillars to the clouds, or carried by the wind horizontally, like the black vapour of a vast foundry. Along the south shore, just opposite to Villa Franca, is a rock of a singular description. It forms a perfect circle, enclosing within it a beautiful basin, accessible for vessels by a narrow gap in the volcanic wall; and this is used as a harbour for ships, and called Porto do Ilhéo. This was evidently a volcano, pushed to a great height from the bottom of the ocean; and having

expended itself, the apex and sides fell into the void circular space, and the water of the ocean rushing through the gap, for ever extinguished the fire, and left behind this singular insular port, as a memorial of its former state of existence. That this was the origin of the basin, there is no doubt, as similar events occurred in other parts of the island, one of them but a few years ago, and thousands are alive who witnessed it.

From the earliest residence of the Portuguese, the island has undergone a succession of mutations from fire; and the phenomena attending them were so awful, that some writers attribute them to the supernatural agency of demons, and call the place Ilha Fatal. In 1522, the town of Villa Franca, in the immediate vicinity of which this volcanic isle had been thrown up, was totally destroyed by a similar convulsion of nature, and attended with such circumstances, that the people think it at this day, a divine visitation. An ecclesiastic, of great reputed sanctity, had come to the town, and warned it of impending ruin; and certain children in the evening were heard crying in the street, "To-morrow we die,—the city will be buried." The townsmen laughed at this, and said, "If we must die, let us die well fed," and continued all night carousing;

About two hours before light, on the 21st of October, while they were looking out at a bright starlight sky, with a gentle breeze blowing, and all nature in calm repose, a subterranean explosion rent many parts of the island asunder; and the serra that overlooked Villa Franca, was in an instant torn from its base, and upturned on the city, burying the whole of it and its vicinity, with all the houses and inhabitants, under the newly raised mountain.

The island had also been distinguished by two high hills, one at the east and the other at the western extremity, near Point Mosteyros. The former still continues, but the latter has disappeared; a subterranean fire burst out at its base, undermined its foundation, and upturned the whole into the sea; and it was at this spot that an island was recently thrown up, while thousands in St. Michael's were looking on, and are now living witnesses of this extraordinary phenomenon; among the rest, the consul, Mr. Reid, who stood on a promontory, which overlooked and commanded a view of the whole magnificent operation which he described to me.

In the year 1810, the island was agitated by various shocks of different degrees of intensity; some shaking the ground with a long undulating

motion, by which many houses were destroyed, and the people who attempted to escape and seek safety in the open air, were dashed to the earth, and more or less injured. On the east of the island, some rocks were rent into an orifice, from which flames and smoke occasionally issued, though there did not seem to be any eruption of lava, or more solid matter.

On the 13th of June, in the following year, these alarming indications again recurred; frequent agitations of the earth were felt, and black vapours were observed to be projected with considerable force from various places. At Ponta del Gado, the capital, several cottages fell, and a portion of the cliff was thrown into the sea. At length, the electric vapour and volcanic matter struggling for exit, forced a passage in a wonderful manner, and all the commotion on the surface subsided.

On the 16th of June, the Sabrina sloop of war, cruising off the west end of the island, observed columns of white smoke arising from the sea, and supposing it to be caused by some naval encounter, hastened towards it, to assist a friend or annoy an enemy. The wind, however, failed her, and she could not approach sufficiently near; but vast flames of fire now issuing from the water, along with the smoke,

convinced the people on board that it was not an engagement, but a volcano, bursting from the bottom of the sea.

The next day, Mr. Reid, with the captain of the Sabrina, and several others, proceeded to the west end of the island, and ascended a cliff three or four hundred feet above the level of the sea, from whence they had a full view of the volcano. The first appearance was, a vast body of smoke revolving horizontally on the surface of the water. From the centre of this, a column of cinders occasionally shot up with immense explosions, accompanied by ashes and stones, forming a spire inclined to the horizon, in the direction of the wind. These spiry projections succeeded each other at intervals, each rising higher than the former, till they ascended as much above the summit of the cliff on which the spectators stood, as they were above the level of the sea. As the light ashes descended, they were dilated into various branches, like pine trees, and the dark powder, mingled with the white smoke, formed, as they were described to me, magnificent plumes, resembling, on a large scale, the black and white ostrich feathers, nodding on the canopy of a hearse. These eruptions were attended by a continued discharge of light and sound, like

the explosions of a battery of cannon; and sketches were taken by Mr. Reid and his companion, of the appearance presented in the light and the dark, which form very extraordinary but awful-looking pictures.

On the 18th, the column was still rising, and the Sabrina approached it as near as she could with safety. At noon, the mouth of a crater was observed, just beginning to show itself above the surface of the sea, in a spot, where there was before known to be forty fathom of water; so that this huge mass of matter must have gradually protruded itself from the bottom, to the height of 240 feet, in forty-eight hours. From hence it was seen more distinctly to ascend, and at three o'clock, it was thirty feet high. On the 19th, it had attained the height of fifty-one feet, and extended itself to the length of three-quarters of a mile, still raging with unabating violence, throwing out large stones to the distance of a mile, and lighter black sand, which was expanded to a greater extent, and covered the Sabrina's deck, then three miles from the spot. These were accompanied by sundry water-spouts, thrown into the air, and again descending in spray or rain.

In this way it continued gradually ascending, and enlarging, by the accumulation of calcined

matter exploded from the bottom of the ocean, till at length the inflammable materials were exhausted, the fire gradually extinguished, the commotion subsided, and when the smoke dispersed, and opened to view what was shrouded in its mysterious vale, a complete and romantic island was seen calmly reposing on the bosom of the ocean, like any other of these insular spots; which either singly, or in clusters, are scattered over the face of the Atlantic.

It was now visited by people, and among the rest, by the crew of the Sabrina, who ran the ship close in with it, and in perfect security landed on the beach on the 4th of July. It was found to be very steep and irregular, rising, in some places, to the height of two or three hundred feet. In many parts it was abrupt, rugged, and inaccessible, but more level and gradual ascents were found, by which the people gained the summit. From hence they saw that the form of the island was nearly circular, and the circumference about a mile. In the centre was a large basin in a state of ebullition, from one side of which ran a stream into the sea, about six yards wide, through an opening left in the rim of the reservoir, opposite St. Michael's; and the temperature of the sea about it was so raised, that at sixty or seventy yards dis-

tance, the water was hotter than the hand could endure.

The materials with which the island was constructed, consisted of lava, cinders, sulphurous concretions, metallic slag, and such substances in general as compose the substratum of the soil of St. Michael's, and of all the islands of the Atlantic, but in a recent state, and so hot, that the feet of those who walked over it could not endure it long. As the island was first seen emerging from the sea, and first visited by the British, this new-found land was taken possession of for his Britannic Majesty, and the crew of the Sabrina departed, leaving the union-jack flying on the highest and most conspicuous point.

To have watched the progress of this island, and ascertained in what period of time its calcined surface became, by the action of the atmosphere, fertile and productive soil, would be a subject of deep interest, not less as an object of philosophic, but religious inquiry, and set at rest those sceptical opinions that have been founded on the eruptions of Mount Etna; but this very magnificent fabric of nature's recent operations, did not long endure. It was seen by degrees gradually to descend again to the level of the water, and in the middle of October it entirely

disappeared below the surface, with the Union flag still on it, like one of our first-rates going down with her colours flying, after some terrible engagement.

It has left behind it, however, a satisfactory and irrefragable testimony of nature's mode of operation in producing the other and more permanent islands of these seas; and Porto do Ilhéo still exists on one side of St. Michael's, to shew what Sabrina had been on the other.

While we see these mutations of nature going on under our own eyes, and islands appearing and disappearing, not the visionary deception of meteors, but actual and substantial land, we should not, I think, be so sceptical on those which have been mentioned as existing in former ages, though now not seen. The Atalantis is minutely described by Plato* as a large continent, existing beyond the Pillar of Hercules, and he had received a particular account of it from those who were at that time the repository of all knowledge, the priests of the Delta of Egypt. Of its disappearance an account is given similar to the phenomena which attended on Sabrina; and it is not without reason that Athanasius Kircher supposes, that the different groups of

* Plato, Timæus, lib. xxxii. p. 704.

islands now seen in the Atlantic are existing fragments of that continent. In more modern times, the island of St. Brandon has appeared and disappeared; and notwithstanding the absurd fables by which the account of it is disfigured, I do not think it at all improbable, that it had once a real existence, and was to be found in the Atlantic as well as in the maps, on which it was continued to be set down so late as the year 1755.

On leaving the island of St. Michael's, our course lay along the southern shore, and brought us close by the Ilhéo. It stood out before Villa Franca, which rose behind it with the fragments of the upturned mountain, which had submerged the former city. From hence we took our departure; so we made the island on the spot where Sabrina had appeared, and we left where Ilhéo still raised its volcanic head above the waters.

We proceeded with a favourable breeze, and in a few days were convinced that we were approaching home by the characteristic aspect of the sky, which now changed its appearance. The weather became chill and damp, with dark dirty looking clouds sailing along, and followed by rain and squalls; and on the 23d of June we saw, for the first time, the sea-bird peculiar to

our shores, and called by sailors, the Channel gull.

After encountering for six days some very hard weather, on the 29th we made the Lizard, and about nine in the evening we landed at Portsmouth.

APPENDIX, No. I.

CARTA REGIA FOR OPENING THE PORTS OF BRAZIL.

Conde da Ponte, Governor and Captain-General of the Captaincy of Bahia.

My Friend,

I the Prince Regent salute you as one I love. Attending to the representation which you caused to be submitted to my Royal presence, on the subject of the interruption and suspension of the commerce of this captaincy, to the grievous prejudice of my subjects, and of my royal exchequer, in consequence of the critical and public events of Europe; and desirous of taking on this important subject some prompt precautions, and capable of remedying such heavy losses,—I am induced to order provisionally, until some general system be consolidated which shall effectually regulate such matters, the following: 1st. That there be admitted into the Custom House of Brazil all and every kind of produce and merchandise, transported in foreign ships, belonging to powers which are at peace with my royal crown, or in the ships of my subjects, on paying at entrance 24 per cent.; to wit, 20 of gross duty, and 4 of a gratuity already established; regulating the receipt of these duties by the tarif already settled in each of these said custom-houses, causing wines, ardent spirits, and sweet oils to pay double the duty hitherto demanded. 2dly. That not only my subjects, but the aforesaid foreigners, may export to such ports as shall seem good to them, for the benefit of commerce and agriculture, which I so much desire to promote, all and every kind of colonial produce, with the exception of Brazil wood, or other produce notoriously exhausted; paying on exportation the same duties as are already established in the respective captaincies; all laws, royal charters, or other orders which have hitherto, in this state of Brazil, prohibited reciprocal commerce and navigation between my subjects and foreigners, being now suspended and without force.

All which you will cause to be executed with the zeal and activity which I expect from you.

Written at Bahia, 28th of January, 1808.

The Prince.

To the Conde da Ponte.

APPENDIX, No. II.

DECREE FOR ELEVATING BRAZIL INTO A KINGDOM.

D. João, by the Grace of God, Prince Regent of Portugal and the Algarves, in Africa and Guinea, and of the Conquest, Navigation, and Commerce of Ethiopia, Arabia, Persia, and India, &c. make known to those to whom this present Letter of Law shall come, that there being constantly in my royal mind the móst lively desire to cause to prosper those States which the Divine Providence has confided to my sovereign rule; and giving, at the same time, its due importance to the magnitude and locality of my dominions in America, to the copiousness and variety of the precious elements of wealth which it contains; and knowing besides how advantageous to my faithful subjects in general will be a perfect union and identity between my kingdom of Portugal, the Algarves, and my dominions of Brazil, by raising them to that grade and political class, which, by the aforesaid proposition, they ought to aspire to, and in which my said dominions have been already considered by the plenipotentiaries of the powers which form the Congress at Vienna, also in the Treaty of Alliance concluded on the 8th of April in the current year, as in the final treaty of the same Congress; I am therefore minded, and it is my pleasure, to ordain as follows:—

1st. That from the publication of this Letter of Law, the State of Brazil shall be elevated to the dignity, preeminence, and denomination of—The Kingdom of Brazil. 2dly. That my kingdom of Portugal, the Algarves, and Brazil, shall form from henceforth one only and united kingdom, under the title of—The United Kingdom of Portugal, Brazil, and the Algarves. 3dly. That for the titles inherent in the crown of Portugal, and of which it has hitherto made use in all its public acts, the new title shall be substituted of—Prince Regent of the United Kingdoms of Portugal, Brazil, and the Algarves, &c.

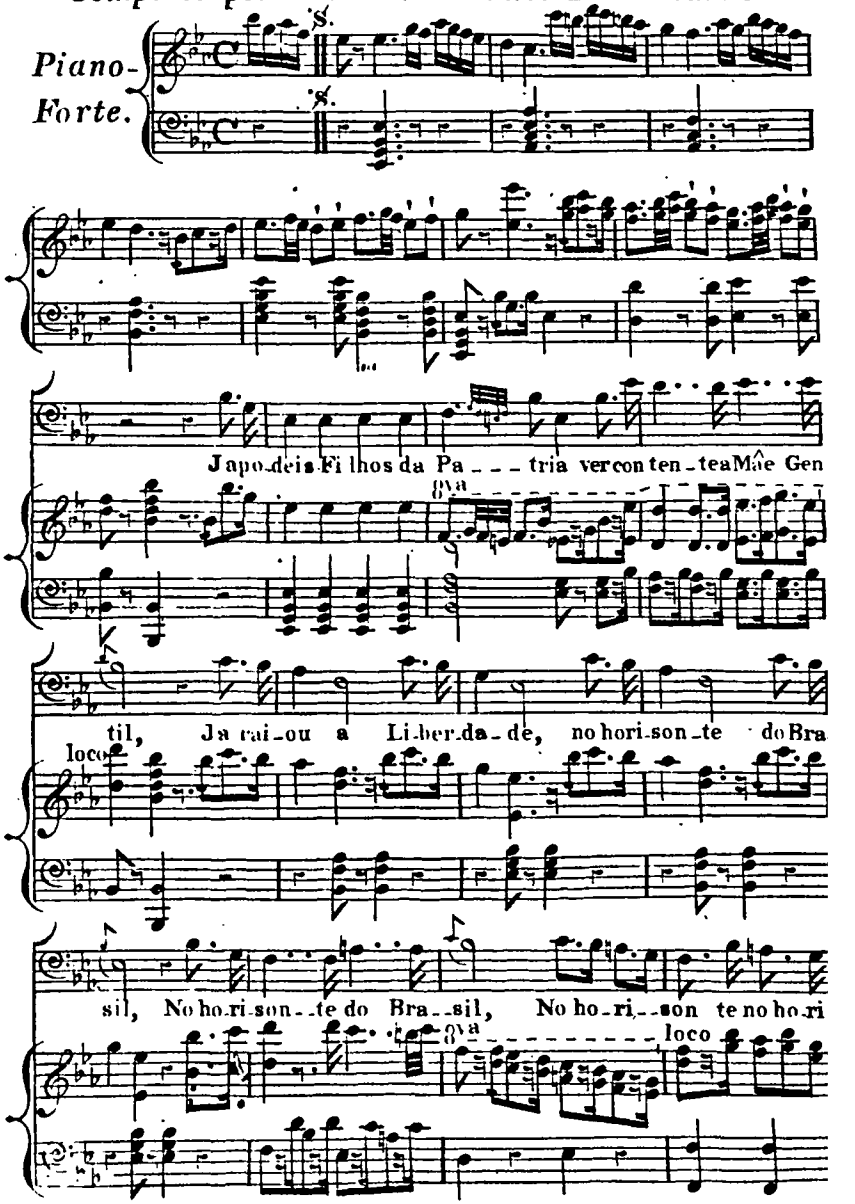
Given in the Palace of Rio de Janeiro the 16th of December, 1815.

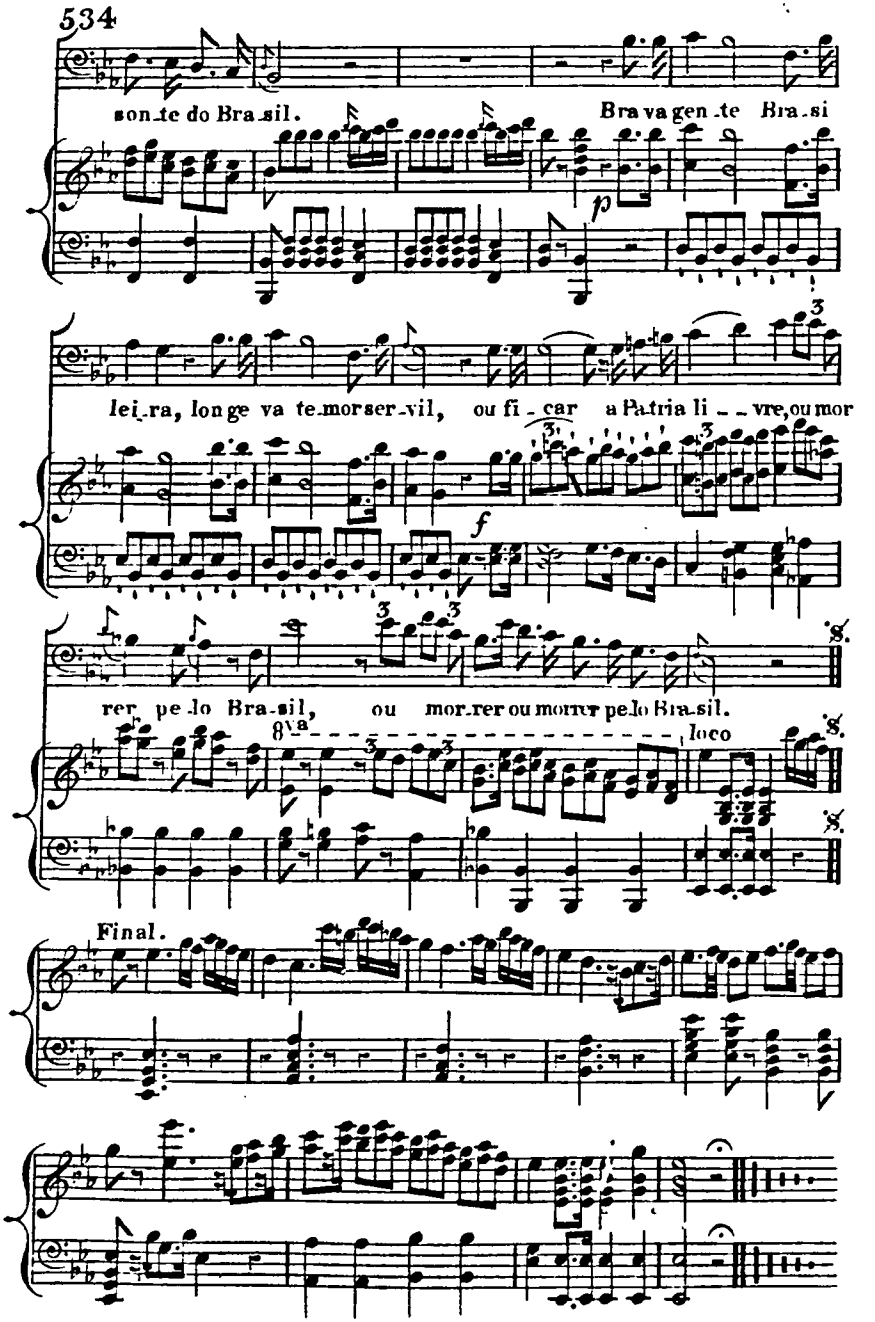
THE PRINCE.

MARQUEZ DE AGUIER.

HYMNO, IMPERIAL, E CONSTITUCIONAL.

Composto por S.M.I.o Senhor Dom Pedro 1º


Piano-
Forte.
Japo-deis Fi lhos da Pa - - - tria ver con ten - tea Mãe Gen
til, Ja rai-ou a Li-ber-da-de, no hori-son-te do Bra
sil, No ho-ri-son - te do Bra - - sil, No ho-ri - - son te no ho-ri
8va
loco


son te do Bra sil.
Bra va gen te Bra si
lei ra, lon ge va te mor ser vil, ou fi car a Pa tria li vre, ou mor
rer pe lo Bra sil, ou mor rer ou morrer pe lo Bra sil.
8va
loco
Final.

APPENDIX, No. IV.

EXPORTS FROM RIO JANEIRO.

Coffee.

Years.	lbs.
1818	11,874,304
1819	8,600,548
1820	14,910,240
1821	16,861,892
1822	24,318,304
1823	29,599,168
1824	36,688,673
1825	29,291,664
1826	41,600,000
1828	58,871,360

Sugar.

	Cases.	Boxes.	Barrels.
1823	24,185	—	—
1825	21,538	1650	—
1826	19,855	1348	—
1828	19,126	465	13,867

The case is about 50 arrobas of 32 lbs. per arroba; the box, 20 to 25 arrobas; the barrel, 6 to 8 arrobas.

Besides the foregoing, there is an export of 10 to 12,000 bags of 4½ arrobas each, of Santos Sugar.

Hides.

	Hides.
1823	273,540
1825	261,910
1826	384,178
1828	207,277

Tobacco.

	Rolls of 75 lbs.
1823	26,896
1825	21,165
1826	27,064
1828	24,620

Cotton.

	Serons of 128 lbs.
1823	8898
1825	3401
1826	4449
1828	2440

CROPS OF SUGAR AT SANTOS.

	Arrobas of 32 lbs.
1824	450,000
1825	550,000
1826	600,000

From the beginning to the middle of the season, about three quarters of the sugars which come to the market are white; afterwards, about one-half; towards the end of the season, hardly one-third.

EXPORTS FROM BAHIA,

MADE UP TO THE 30TH SEPTEMBER EACH YEAR.

Sugar.

	Cases.
1819	29,775
1820	38,688
1821	48,814
1822	35,660
1823	10,272

Cotton.

	Bags of 150 lbs.
1819	29,311
1820	41,708
1821	41,146
1822	34,720
1823	8302

The case at Bahia is smaller than that of Rio Janeiro — say 40 arrobas. The year 1823 was one of revolution.

TRADE OF THE PORT OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

Dr. Importations, 1828.		Exportations, 1828.	Cr.
Great Britain	2,200,000	Coffee 1,839,730 arrobas	5,151,244$
France	350,000	Sugar 963,000 do.	3,466,800
United States	150,000	Ditto 47,000 do.	141,000
Germany, &c.	60,000	Hides 207,277 hides	1,243,662
Mediterranean and Portugal	300,000	Cotton 11,080 arrobas	55,400
		Horns 365,288 horns	73,055
	£ 3,060,000		10,131,161
		Specie, Valuables, &c.	14,348,839
At 8$ per 1l. sterl.	24,480,000$		24,480,000$

The remittances to London from the three ports of Rio Janeiro, Bahia, and Pernambuco, for payment of dividends and expenses of embassies for the last year, was 595,000*l.* or 4,500,000$; besides which, during the war, there was exclusively remitted from Rio Janeiro, the expense of the blockading squadron in the River Plate, amounting to 300,000$ monthly, and about 150,000$ more, the expenditure of the army at Monte Video, and in Rio Grande, beyond the revenue of those provinces.

In making up the above account, the tobacco and rice exported are not included, because these articles are sent to the ports of the south, and the produce coming back in hides, magnifies the amount of the articles afterwards exported to Europe.

The estimate of importations must more or less be matter of conjecture; it is the opinion that one-third of the imports from England are sold for the trade of the coast of Africa; when that trade ceases, there will be a falling off to that extent, besides what further consumption may be indirectly induced from the activity occasioned by that trade, amongst the persons and their families engaged in it. The exchanges may therefore, on the ceasing of the slave trade, be expected to improve; any advance in the value of colonials in the markets of Europe, will contribute to the same end. In the meantime, it is evident that Rio Janeiro is not in a situation to augment her foreign expenditure in the most trifling degree, without occasioning burdens of a most oppressive nature to the people.

LIST of SHIPS of Foreign Nations which entered the Port of Rio Janeiro for the following Years.

Years.	English.	American.	French.	Swedish.
1815	80	—	—	—
1816	130	—	—	9
1817	147	—	—	14
1818	160	—	—	8
1819	153	62	29	16
1820	173	73	31	12
1821	204	77	38	19
1822	190	99	37	21
1823	224	104	25	15
1824	249	159	41	30
1825	222	93	35	29
1826	156	118	37	16
1827	211	138	39	24
1828	266	151	39	14

Netherlands, &c., about equal to the Swedish.

APPENDIX, No. V.

NAMES OF THE STREETS, &c. AND NUMBER OF HOUSES, IN THE CITY OF RIO DE JANEIRO, IN THE YEAR 1829.

No. on Map.		Braças.	Houses.
8	Altura, (*Height*) da Saude	62	40
225	Bairro (*District*) da Gloria	194	116
114	Beco (*Alley*) dos Aflictos	22	24
50	— da Alfama	37	19
79	— da Alfandega	36	57
87	— dos Barbeiros	22	24
185	— da Batalha	31	19
69	— dos Cachorros	79	73
187	— do Calabouço	64	40
168	— do Carmo	32	18
89	— das Cancellas	35	6
177	— das Ferreiros	50	42
176	— da Fidalga	34	18
97	— do Fisco	21	16
6	— da Gamboa	96	41
181	— do Guindaste	24	21
49	— do Ignacio	66	28
216	— do Imperio	32	9
31	— de bom Jardim	80	5
60	— de João Baptista	28	34
83	— da Lapa	17	18
19	— do Livramento	14	2
193	— de Manoel Carvalho	31	18
18	— de boa Morte	29	30
184	— da Moura	23	17
182	— da Muzica	23	18
57	— da Pedreira	29	22
161 162	— do Piolho	50	48
236	— da Praya	80	4
192	— do Proposito	37	18
67	Beco das Quarteis	63	57
106	— do Rosario	21	15
70	— de Santa Rita	16	16
14	— da Saude	24	8
12	— do Suspiro	83	13
186	— dos Tambores	61	25
175	— da Torre de S. José	35	15
219	Boqueirão (*Glen*) da Lapa	33	21
131	Campo (*Plain*) da Acclamação	1180	133
189	Castello (*Castle*)	510	104
53	Ladeiro (*Slope*) da Conceição	120	73
183	Largo (*Square*) da Batalha	160	30
103	— do Capim	142	55
166	— do Carioca	115	29
116	— de S. Domingos	65	24
110	— de S. Francisco de Paula	140	31
220	— da Lapa	130	15
185	— da Misericordia	70	15
81	— do Paço	315	26
71	— de Santa Rita	65	34
139	— do Rocio	315	44
104	— do Rosario	110	50
46	Morro (*Hill*) da Conceição	56	22
47	— da Conceição	50	21
228	— da Gloria		29
212	— da S. Theresa		
18 17	— do Livramento	142	55

No. on Map.		Braças.	Houses.
163	Morro de S. Antonio		
159	Praca (*Place*) da Constituição	735	111
27	Praia (*Shore*) Formosa	440	199
230	— do Flamengo	650	44
4	— da Gamboa	405	146
222	— da Lapa	110	54
196 197	— de Sta. Luzia	430	114
179	— de Manoel	125	104
77	— dos Mineiros	92	81
29	— da Pedreira	135	8
80	— do Peixe	85	79
48	— da Prainha	192	167
15	— da Saude	190	167
49	— do Valongo	105	101
16	— do Valonguinho	170	41
96	Rua (*Street*) da Alfandega	527	503
58	— do Aljube	142	79
194	— da Ajuda	330	267
36	— de Santa Anna	121	45
199	— de Santo Antonio	90	43
82	— de Arco dos Telles	50	29
207	— dos Arcos	133	56
208	— dos Arcos ou do Rezende	110	17
209	— dos Arcos	200	57
134	— do Areal	173	45
68	— de S. Bento	93	96
204	— dos Barbonos	270	136
55	— do Jogo da bola	115	83
169	— da Cadeia	179	186
90	— da Candelaria	175	94
142	— da Cantaria	117	62
167	— do Cano	297	303
226	— de Cateté	710	264
88	— de Traz do Carmo	125	130
115	— da Conceição	268	117
148	— do Conde	870	313
54	— do Coreto	125	106
43	Rua da Costa	205	40
173	— do Cotorêlo	95	79
35	— de S. Diogo	345	112
85	— Direita	307	233
160	— do Espirito Santo	85	48
138	— das Flores	304	81
108	— do Fogo	250	155
137	— Formosa	360	161
111	— de S. Francisco de Paula	185	142
51	— de Traz de S. Francisco	30	24
52	— do Fundo	26	26
3	— da Gamboa	95	25
11	— da Gamboa	150	27
191	— da Guarda Velha	132	61
228	— da Gloria		
66	— das Quarteis	70	73
97	— de Traz do Hospicio	526	428
234	— do Infante	82	22
153	— dos Invalidos	300	132
32	— de bom Jardim	206	72
59	— de S. Joaquim	313	225
125	— de S. Jorge	137	65
170	— de S. José	180	205
224	— da Lapa	125	110
235	— da Laranjeira	200	21
221	— de Travessa da Lapa	26	8
101	— dos Latoeiros	144	130
154	— do Lavradio	334	188
143	— de S. Leopoldo	128	25
188	— do Recolhimento	45	14
12	— do Livramento	260	133
41	— de S. Lourenço	145	58
196	— de Santa Luzia	32	21
206	— das Mangeiras	88	80
205	— das Marecas	78	48
211	— da Mata Cavallos	670	254
146	— de Mata Porcos	552	131
174	— da Misericordia	232	238

No. on Map.				Braças.	Houses.
100	Rua dos Ourives			375	319
99	— do Ouvidor			276	229
92	— Nova do Ouvidor			68	58
217	— do Passeio			182	74
124	— do Sra. dos Passos			283	228
232	— de Pedreira			300	80
74 136 30	— de S. Pedro			1323	655
72	— dos Pescadores			150	157
165	— do Piolho			156	164
63	— da Prainha			188	73
42	— do Principe			214	80
229	— do Principe, Cateté			100	24
37	— da Princeza			224	138
231	— da Princeza, Cateté			120	34
10	— do Proposito			146	78
33	— da Providencia			86	50
91	— da Quitanda			355	227
98	— do Rosario			270	220
95 135 140	— do Sabão			765	619
24 34	— do Sacco			507	198
119	— de S. Sacramento			120	63
151 152	— do Senado.	300			84
		96			57
150	— Nova do Senado			57	2
158	— das Ciganos			127	71
9	— da Saude			140	31
214 25	— de Sta. Theresa	176			54
		180			36
2	— da União			50	17
107	— da Valla			332	300
73	— das Violas			308	289
44	— do Valongo			335	225
1	Sacco (*Bay*) do Alferes			390	229
38	Travessa (*Cross Street*) de Santa Anna			95	2
178	— da Assembléa			11	15
117	— dos Domingos			23	9
109	— de S. Francisco de Paula			46	31
126	1ra — de S. Joaquim			265	78
127	2da — de S. Joaquim			260	45
223	Travessa da Lapa			37	23
222	— da Praia da Lapa			37	23
13	— do Livramento			145	58
123	— da Moeda			37	1
178	— do Paço			62	40
233	— da Pedreira			160	41
141	— do Rocio			130	2
105	— do Rosario			20	13
121	— de S. Sacramento			48	1
215	— de Santa Theresa			32	14
				32,716	15,623
152	Capella (*Chapel*) de Sto. Antonio dos Pobres				
56	— da Conceição				
210	— do Menino Deos				
116	— dos Domingos				
118	— de Santa Efigenia				
51	— de S. Francisco				
228	— da N. S. da Gloria				
128	— de S. Gonçalo Garcia				
86	— Imperial (Sé.)				
203	— de Jerusalem				
102	— de bom Jesus				
125	— de S. Jorge				
82	— de N. S. da Lapa dos Necessidades				
120	— da Lampadosa				
20	— da Senora do Livramento				
197	— de Santa Luzia				
94	— de N. S. Mai dos Homens				
124	— de N. S. das Passos				
146	— do Mata Porcos				
87	— do Terceiros do Carmo				
7	— da Saude				
201	Convento (*Convent*) de N. S. da Ajuda				
164	— de Saõ Antonio				
64	— de S. Bento				
220	— do Carmo				

No. on Map.
109 Convento de S. Fancisco de Paula
213 — de Santa Theresa
40 Freguezia (*Parish Church*) de Santa Anna
90 — da Candelaria
175 — de S. José
71 — de S. Rita
119 — de S. Sacramento
93 Hospicio (*Monks' Retreat*)
164 Hospital (*Hospital*) de Santo Antonio
220 — do Carmo
109 — de S. Francisco de Paula
189 — Militar
185 — da Misericordia
170 — de N. S. do Parto
115 Igreja (*Church*) de N. S. da Conceição e boa Morte
83 — da Cruz
202 — Ingleza
74 — de S. Pedro
104 — do Rosario
200 — de S. Sebastião (Sé Velha)
59 Seminario (*Seminary*) de S. Joaquim
199 — de S. José
122 Acadamia (*Academy*) das Bellas Artes
185 — Medico Cirugica
112 — Militar
112 Archivo (*Archives*) Militar
78 Alfandega (*Custom House*)
186 Arçenal (*Arsenal*) do Exercito
75 — da Marinha
113 Aula (*Hall*) dos Mutuos
85 Banco (*Bank*) Nacional

No. on Map.
86 Bibliotheca (*Library*) Imperial
21 Cemeterio (*Burying Ground*) dos Inglezes
195 — da Misericordia
198 Corral (*Butchery*)
174 Correio (*Post Office*) Geral
122 Erario (*Mint*)
147 Estrada (*Road*) Catumby
145 — de Tijuca
144 — de S. Christovão
76 Ilha (*Island*) das Cobras
157 Intendencia (*Office*) da Policia
5 Moinho (*Mill*) a vapor
130 Musêo (*Museum*)
84 Paço (*Court*)
56 Palacio (*Palace*) do Bispado
174 — do Corpo Legislativo
155 — da Justicia
133 — do Senado
129 — do Senado da Camara
131 Palacete
218 Passeio (*Walk*) Publico
61 Prizão (*Prison*) do Aljube
186 — do Calabouço
171 — do Castello
39 Quartel (*Barrracks*) do Campo da Aclamacão
203 — dos Barbonios
64 — de S. Bento
183 — da Batalha ou da Moura
65 — das Quarteis
191 — Velha
185 Recolhimento (*Retreat*)
113 Theatro (*Theatre*)
122 Thesouraria (*Treasury*)
7 Trapixe (*Public Stores*)

APPENDIX, No. VI.

CIVIL LIST.

Allowance (dotaçao) to the Emperor	200,000$000
Young Prince and Princesses	12,000,000
Chapel Royal	74,000,000
Imperial Library	4,186,000
Museum	4,512,000
Medical and Chirurgical Academy	6,782,000
Botanic Garden	2,902,000
Public Walk	1,905,000
Academy of Fine Arts	6,980,000
Vaccine Institution	1,000,000
PUBLIC OFFICERS.	
Councillors of State	22,000,000
Chamber of Senators*	180,000,000
Chamber of Deputies	242,000,000
Public Professors	11,000,000
Tachygraphs (Reporters), and Secretaries of both Chambers	27,000,000
Office for Foreign Affairs, Minister	4,800$000
AMBASSADORS.	
English	12,000,000
French	9,600,000
Russian	12,000,000
Austrian	12,000,000
Portuguese	10,000,000
Spanish	10,000,000
Netherlands	4,000,000
Roman	8,000,000
Prussian	4,000,000
Danish	6,600,000
Swedish	6,600,000
Neapolitan	6,600,000
Tuscan	6,600,000
Sardinian	6,600,000
United States	4,000,000
Mexican	4,000,000
South American Republics, each	6,000,000

* By the 39th and 51st articles of the constitutional code, the deputies and senators receive a subsidy during the sessions, and also an indemnity for their travelling expenses, going and returning, always to be rated at the conclusion of the former sessions.

THE END.

PRINTED BY R. CLAY, BREAD-STREET-HILL.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

A NARRATIVE of a JOURNEY from CONSTANTINOPLE to ENGLAND, through the Countries lately the seat of War, with Maps and Plates. Third Edition. Post 8vo. Price 12*s*.

AN ESSAY on ANCIENT COINS, MEDALS, and GEMS, as illustrating the Progress of Christianity in the Early Ages. Second Edition, greatly enlarged. Price 6*s*.

ACCOUNT of the LEVANT COMPANY; with some Notices of the Benefits conferred upon Society by its Officers, in promoting the cause of Humanity, Literature, and the Fine Arts, &c. &c. Second Edition. Price 2*s*. 6*d*.

ALSO, PREPARING FOR PUBLICATION,

LETTERS written from GREECE and CONSTANTINOPLE, during a Residence of Five Years; comprising the interesting Events connected with the commencement of the Greek Revolution, &c. &c.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

Vol. I.

	To face page
Plan of Rio de Janeiro, opposite to Title-page.	
Procellaria Pelagica	6
Peasants of Madeira conveying Wine	29
View of Rio de Janeiro	130
Arms of the Kingdom and Empire of Brazil	173
British Chapel	326
Hill and Church of N. S. da Gloria	345
South Side of the Rocio, or Praca da Constituiçao	459
Aqueduct	499
Chalybeate Well	504

Vol. II.

Map of the Author's route to the Minas Geraes, opposite Title-page.

Serra and City of S. José	89
Serra and City of S. João d'el Rey	132
Ita Columi, or the Child of Stone	193
The Vargem, with the Organ Mountains	373
The Opening of the Senate House	418
Chamber of Deputies	427
Sections of a Slave Ship	479
Fucus Natans	500
Peasants of St. Michael's proceeding to the Town of Del Gado	516
Island of St. Michael, with its Volcanic appearance	519

CORRIGENDA.

Vol. I.—*Page 57, line* 10, *for* at Algarves *read* in the Algarves. 91, 21, *f.* Sebastião *r.* Sebastião. 105, 22, *f.* boil again with *r.* boil with. 114, note, *f.* penius, galliard *r.* funius, galliard. 134, 20, *f.* gastronimic *r.* gastronomic. 140, 21, *f.* port and being *r.* port and bearing. 142, 11, *f.* siesta *r.* sesta. 157, 14, *f.* Tijuco *r.* Tijuca. 158, 23, *f.* Marquis de *r.* Marquez de. 169, 11, *f.* Rua Dereita *r.* Rua Direita. 175, 16, *f.* were contributed *r.* was contributed. 182, 11, *f.* ambassador *r.* consul. 273, last, *f.* fortunate *r.* fortunately. 322, 9, *f.* Barbonos *r.* Barbonios. 373, 14, *f.* Santo Espirito *r.* Espirito Santo. 378, 19, *f.* of the Terceira *r.* of the Terceiros. 405, 8, *f.* person *r.* persons. 408, 24, *f.* scrofulous *r.* scurfy. 461, 10, *f.* October, 1808 *r.* October, 1828. 464, 14, *f.* estera *r.* esteira. 465, 18, *f.* forty-five thousand *r.* forty-three thousand. 471, 19, *f.* patrona *r.* patrono.

Vol. II.—*Contents* iv. *for* Ilhéo *read* Ilhéos. v. *f.* Lagoa Dourado *r.* Lagoa Dourada. *Page* 75, note, *f.* Auricaria *r.* Arancaria. 81, 2, *f.* Bestioga *r.* Bertioga. 87, 15, arrive at S. João *r.* arrive at S. José. 154, 16, *f.* I have pointed *r.* there were pointed. 176, 19, *f.* some wine *r.* sour wine. 184, 16, *f.* to back *r.* to break. 196, 22, *f.* were 7,000 *r.* are 7,000. 272, 22, box displayed *r.* box be displayed. 290, 12, *f.* house a family *r.* house was a family. 302, note, *f.* pellata *r.* peltata. 318, note, *f.* sopra Justicia *r.* sobre a Justicia. 438, 2, *f.* hostilely *r.* hastily. 488, 6, *f.* papers were written *r.* papers written. 489, 21, *f.* slaves *r.* slaver.

00088322

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 04 April, 2016